THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF THOMAS NASHE.

VOL. III.

HAUE WITH YOU TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.
TERRORS OF THE NIGHT.
1594—1596.
Free vent of words.

*Venus and Adonis*, l. 334.

Bitter words to ban.

*Rape of Lucrece*, l. 1460.
The Anthology Library

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBEAN
Unique or Very Rare
Books
in Verse and Prose
Largely
From the Library of

Henry Bath Esqr

[Image of Henry Bath Esqr]

Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations
by the
Rev. Alexander B. [Signature]

For Private Circulation Only
THE COMPLETE WORKS
OF
THOMAS NASHE.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.

BY THE REV.
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. III.

HAUE WITH YOU TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

TERRORS OF THE NIGHT.

1594—96.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.
1883—84.

50 Copies.]
Oh, who that sees this murky way would think
That even here are issues of the light?
Eschewing which so many spirits sink,
Embracing as their bride the vacant night;
Yet still it winds round true Elysian bowers,
Ne'er closed to man while last his mortal hours.

No gate of burning adamant is there
Against us barr'd, prohibiting ingress.
Short is the way, and soft as summer's air,
That upward leads to joy no tongues express,
To those smooth confines where the eye can trace
The gates of light, and Heaven's own glorious face.

_Ouranogaea_, vol. i., c. xii., p. 262 (1872).

Night's 'scapes doth open lay,
_Rape of Lucrece_, l. 747.
IX.

HARVEY-GREENE TRACTATES.

III. HAVE WITH YOU TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

1596.
NOTE.

For 'Haue with you to Saffron-Walden' I am indebted to the Huth Library. See 'Memorial-Introduction—Critical' in closing volume on it. It is a small 4to of 83 unpaged leaves—title-page and A 2—X 3.—G.
Haue vvith you to Saffron-vvalden.

OR,

Gabriell Harueys Hunt is vp.

Containing a full Answere to the eldest sone of the Halter-maker.

OR,

Nafhe his Conffutation of the sinfull Doctor.

The Mott or Posie, instead of Omne tulit punétum:

Pacis fiducia nunquam.

As much to say, as I sayd I would speake with him.

Printed at London by John Danter.

1596.
To the most Orthodoxall and reuerent Corrector of staring haires, the sincere & finigraphicall rarifier of prolixious rough barbarifme, the thrice egregious and censoriall animaduertifer of vagrant moustachios, chiefe scavinger of chins, and principall* Head-man of the parish wherein * quasi conversant about he dwells, speciall superuisor of all excrementall superfluities for Trinitie Colledge in Cambridge, and (to conclude) a not able and singular benefactor to all beards in generall, Don Richardo Barbaroſsa de Caesario, Tho: Nashe wisheth the highest Toppe of his contentment and felicitie, and the Shortning of all his enemies.

A CUTE & amiable Dick, not Die miki Musa virum, Musing Dick, that studied a whole yeare to know which was the male and female of red herrings: nor Die obsceco,
Dick of all Dickes, that, in a Church where the Organs were defac’d, came and offered himselfe with his pipe and taber: nor old Dick of the Castle, that vpon the newes of the losse of Calis, went and put a whole bird-spit in the pike of his buckler: nor Dick Swash, or desperate Dick, that’s such a terrible Cutter at a chyne of beefe, and deuoures more meate at Ordinaries, in discoursing of his fraies and deep acting of his flashing and hewing, than would serue halfe a dozen Brewers Dray-men: nor Dick of the Cow, that mad Demi-lance Northren Borderer, who plaied his prizes with the lord Jockey so brauely: but paraphrasticall gallant Patron Dick, as good a fellow as euer was Heigh fill the pot hofteffe: curteous Dicke, comical Dicke, liuely Dicke, louely Dicke, learned Dicke, olde Dicke of Lichfield, Iubo te plurimum saluere, which is, by interpretation, I joy to heare thou haft so profited in gibridge.

I am sure thou wondrest not a little, what I meane to come vppon thee so straungelye with such a huge dicker of Dickes in a heape altogether: but that’s but to shew the redundance of thy honorable Familie, and how affluent and copious thy name is in all places, though Erafmus, in his Copia Verborum, neuer mentions it.

Without further circumstance, to make short, (which, to speake troth, is onely proper to thy
Trade, / the short and long of it is this, There is 
a certaine kinde of Doctor of late very pittifully 
grownen bald, and thereupon is to be shauen 
immediately, to trie if that will help him: now 
I know no such nimble fellow at his weapon in 
all England as thy selfe, who (as I heare) standst 
in election at this instant to bee chiefe Crowner or 
clipper of crownes in Cambridge, and yet no defacer 
of the Queenes coyne neither: and it is pittie but 
 thou shou'dst haue it, for thou hast long seru'd as 
a Clarke in the crowne office, and concluded 
yllo-gismes in Barbara anie time this sixteene yeare, 
and yet neuer met'st with anie requittal, except it 
were some few french crownes, pild Friers crownes, 
dye shauen, not so much worth as one of these 
Scottish horne crownes: which (thy verie enemies 
must needes confesse) were but bare wages, (yea, 
as bare as my nayle, I faith,) for thy braue desert 
and dexteritie: & some such Thinne gratuitie or 
Haire-loome it may be the Doctor may present thee 
with, but how euer it falls, hath his head or his 
hayre the falling sicknesse neuer so, without anie 
more delay, Of or on, trimm'd hee must bee with 
a trice, and there is no remedie, but thou must 
needes come and ioyne with me to giue him the 
terrible cut.

Where fore (good Dick) on with thy apron, 
& arme thy selfe to set him downe at the first word:
Stand to him, I say, and take him a button lower: fear not to shew him a knacke of thy occupation, and once in thy life let it be said, that a Doctor weares thy cloth, or that thou haft caufd him to doo pennance, and weare Haire-cloth for his finnes. Were he as he hath been (I can assure thee) he would clothe and adorne thee with manie gracious gallant complements, and not a rotten tooth that hangs out at thy hoph window, but shoult cost him an indefinite Turkish armie of English Hexameters. O, he hath been olde dogge at that drunken, ttaggering kinde of verfe, which is all vp hill and downe hill, like the way betwixt Stamford and Beechfeeld, and goes like a horse plunging through the myre in the deep of winter, now fouft vp to the saddle, and straight aloft on his tiptoes. Indeed, in old King Harrie sinceritie, a kinde of verfe it is, hee hath been enfeoft in from his minoritie, for as I haue bin faithfully informed, hee firft cryde in that verfe in the verie moment of his birth, and when he was but yet aJSicuis, a bill fresh-man in Cambridge, he set vp § Si- for anything quisses, & sent his accounts to his father in those iouling Heroicks. Come, come, account § For decision of him as you lift, by Poll and Aedipoll I protest, your noble / Science of § decision and contraction is immortally beholding to him,
for twice double his Patrimonie hath he spent in carefull cherishing & preferring his picker-devant: and besides, a deuine vicarly brother of his, called Astrologiſcal RICHARD, some few yeares since (for the benefit of his countrey) moſt ſtudiously compiled a profound Abridgement upon beards, & therein copiously dilated of the true discipline of peakes, & no leſſe fruitleſſely determined betwixt the ſwallowes taile cut, & the round beard like a rubbing brufh. It was my chaunce (O thrice bleſſed chaunce) to the great comfort of my Mufe to perufe it, although it came but priuately in Print: and for a more rateſſed paſſport (in thy opinion) that I haue read it and digefted it, this title it beareth, a *Defence of* short haire againſt Synesius and Pierius: or rather, in more familiar English to exprefſe it, a Daſh over the head againſt baldnes, verie neceſſary to be obſerued of al the looſer fort, or looſe haird fort, of yong Gentlemen & Courtiers, and no leſſe pleafant and proﬁtable to be remembred of the whole Commonwealth of the Barbars. The Poſie theretoo annexed, Prolixior eſt breuitate fua, as much to ſay, as Burne Bees, and haue bees, &. ſhair the more it is cut the more it comes: latelỹ deveſed and fet forth by Richard Hauey the unluckie Prophet of prodigies. If this may not ſettle thy beleefe, but
yet thou requirest a further token to make vp euen money, in the Epistle Dedicatorie thereof to a great Man of this Land, whom he calls *his verie right honourable good Lord*, he recounteth his large bounties bestowed vppon him, and talkes of the secret favours which hee did him in his Studie or Clozet at Court.

Heare you Dick, marke you here what aiewell this learning is: how long will it be, ere thou studie thy selfe to the like preferment? No reafon I see, why thou being a Barber, shouldst not bee as *hair-braind* as he. Onely for writing a booke of beards, in which he had no further experience, but by looking on his father when he made hairs, hair lines I meane, and yet not such *lines of life* as a hangman hath in his hand, but haire lines to hang linnen on: for that small demerit (I say) is he thus advanced and courted, & from Astrologicall Dick rafed to bee fauorite Dick. And verie meete it is he should be so fauored and rafed by high Personages, for before he was as low a Parfon or Vicar as a man could lightly set ey on.

With teares be it spoken, too few such lowly Parsons & Preachers we haue, who, laying aside all worldly encumbrances, & plefant cœurersing with Saint/Ausen, Ierome, Chrisoftome, wilbe content to read a Lecture, as he hath done, *de lana caprina*, (almost as slender a caft subiect as a Catts
THE EPISTLE DEDICATORIE.

fmelling haires,) or trauerfe the subtile distinctions twixt short cut and long taile.

Fie, this is not the fortieth dandiprat part of the affectionate Items, hee hath bequeathed on your mysterie: with five thousand other doctrinal devotions, hath he adopted himselfe more than a by founder of your trade, conioyning with his aforesaid Doctor Brother in eightie eight browne Bakers dozen of Almanackes.

In euerie of which famous Annals of the foure windes, vnfallible rules are prefcribed for men to obserue the best time to breed loue-lockes in, and so to *ringle a thorough hayre for * Some holde that any place of a mans chin, being rubbed with a gold rig being heated, will so harden the skin, that there shall never anie haire grow there more.

Some rootmg, that it shall neuer put foorth his snayles hornes againe: as also vnder what Planet a man maye with least danger picke his teeth, and how to catch the Sun in such a phisicall Signe, that one may sweare and be not a haire the worfe.

But these amplifications adiourned to another Returne, all the deuoyre, Diamond Dick, which I am in this Epistle of thy daintie composition to expostulate, is no more but this, that since vnder thy redoubted patronage and protection my workes are to haue their royal † Bestellein, and more than common safe-conduct into the world, and

†Bestellein, the royallest Passe in Germanie that may bee, only for Dukes & great princes.
that for the Meridian of thy honour and magnificence they are chiefly elevated & erected, thou wouldst brauely mount thee on thy barbed steed, alias thy triumphant barbers Chaire, and girding thy keene Palermo rasour to thy side, in stead of a trenchant Turkish femitorie, and setting thy sharpe pointed * launce in his rest, be with them at a haires bredth that backbite and detract me.

Phlebothomize them, fling them, tutch them Dick, tutch them, play the valiant man at Armes, and let them bloud and spare not; the Lawe allowes thee to doe it, it will beare no action: and thou, beeing a Barber Surgeon, art priviledgd to drefs fleth in Lent, or anie thing.

Admit this be not sufficient to coole the heat of their courage, serch them in another vaine, by discharging thy pocket dags against them, and let them smart for it to the proophe.

Steele thy painted May-pole, or more properly to tearme it, thy redoubted rigorous horfman's staff (which at thy dore as a manifest signe thou hangft forth of thy martiall prowess and hardimenent) on their insolent creasts, that maligne and despise me, and forbeare not to bring forth all thy brass/peecees against them. It is well knownen thou haft been a Commandeur and a Souldier euer since Tilbury Campe, and earlie and late walkt th
round, and dealt verie short and round with all those that come vnder thy fingers: strugled through the foamie deepe, and skirmisht on the downes: wherefore, if thou tak’st them not downe soundlie, with a hey downe and a derry, and doost not shuffle and cut with them lustilie, actum est de pudicitia, I aske of God thou maist light vpon none but bald-pates till thou dieft. But I trow thou wilt carry a better pate with thee, and not suffer any of these indigent old fashiond judgements to carry it away: whose wits were right stuffe when those loue-letters in rime were in request, & whose capacities never mended their pace, since Pace, the Duke of Norsolkes foole died. As for the decaied Proctor of Saffron-walden himself, if he wander within the precincts of thy indignation, I make no question but of thy owne accord, without any motion of mine, thou wilt be as ready as any catchpoule, out of all scotch & notch, to torment him, & deal as snip snap snappishly with him, as euer he was delt withall since he first dated letters from his gallerie in Trinitie Hall; not suffering a lowfe that belongs to him to passe thy hands without a powling penny: and yet as I shrewedly presage, thou shalt not finde many powling pence about him neither, except he rob Peter to pay Powle, empowerish his spiritual Vicar brother to helpe to pay for his powling, and he, alas,
(dolefull four nobles Curate, nothing so good as the Confessor of Tyburne, or Superintendent of Pancredge,) hath nittifide himselfe with a dish, rotundè profundè, any time this fourteene yeare, to saue charges of sheep-shearing: &; to make of a thing more than it is, hath scarce so much Ecclesiastical living in all, as will serve to buy him cruel strings to his bookes, and haire buttons.

Wherefore I passe not if in tender charitie and commiferation of his estate, I adde ten pound & a purse to his wages and stipend, canuaze him and his Angell brother Gabriell in ten sheetes of paper, and so leaue them to goe hang themselues; or outright to hang, draw, and quarter them al vnder one, I care not if I make it eighteen: on that condition, in their last will & testament they bequeath me eighteene wise words in the way of answere betwixt them.

I dare giue my word for them, they will never doe it, no, not although it were inioynd to them in stead of their neckverse: their whole stock of wit, when it was at the best, beeing but ten English / Hexameters and a Lenuoy: wherefore generous Dick, (without hum drum be it spoken) I vtterly despaire of them, or not so much despaire of them, as count them a paire of poore ideots, being not only but also two brothers, two blockheads, two blunderkins, hauing their braines stuft
with nought but balder-dash, but that they are the verie botts & the glanders to the gentle Readers, the dead Palfie and Apoplexie of the Press, the Sarpego and the Sciatica of the 7. Liberall Sciences, the surfeitting vomit of Ladie Vanitie, the sworne bauds to one anothers vain-glorie: &c, to conclude, the most contemptible Mounfier Aiaxes of excrementall conceits, and stinking kennel-rakt vp inuention, that this or anie Age euer afforded.

I pry thee, furmounting Donzel Dick, whiles I am in this heate of Inueftiue, let me remember thee to do this one kindnes more for me, videlicet, when thou haft frizled and scrubd and tickled the haires sweetly, and that thou haft filcht thy selfe into an excellent honourable assembly of sharpe iudiciall ferie wits and fine spirits, bee it this winter at an Euening tearme, or where-euer, with all the thundering grace and magnanimous eloquence that thou haft, put vp this heroycall Grace in their behalfe, if thou bee not past grace.

A Grace put vp in behalfe of the Harueys.

Supplicat reuerentiis vestris, per Apostrophen, &c.

In English thus:

Most humbliye sueth to your Reuerences, the reprobate brace of Brothers of the Harueys: to wit, witleffe Gabriell and ruffling Richard; That whereas for
anie time this foure and twentie yeare they haue plaid the fantasticall gub-shites and goose-giblets in Print, and kept a hateful scribling and a pamphleting about earth-quakes, conjuncions, inundations, the fearful blazing starre, and the forsworne Flaxe-wife: and tooke upon them to be false Prophets, Weather-wizards, Fortune-tellers, Poets, Philosophers, Orators, Historiographers, Mounte-banke, Ballet-makers, and left no Arte undefamed with their filthie dull-headed pratife: it may please your Worships and Masterships, these infidell premisses considered, & that they haue so fully performed all their acts in absurditie, impudence, & foolerie, to grant them their absolute graces, to commence at Dawes croffe, and with your general subscriptions confirm them for the profoundest Arcandums, Acarnanians, and Dizards, that haue been discovered since the Deluge: & so let them passe throughout the Queenes Dominions.
Purposely that space I left, that as manie as I shall persuade they are Pachcoes, Poldaviffes, and Dringles, may set their hands to their definitiue sentence, and with the Clearke helpe to crye Amen to their eternall vnhandsomming.

Plie them, plie them vnceffantly, vnico Dick, euen as a Water-man plies for his Fares, and insinuate and goe about the bush with them, like as thou art wont to insinuate and go about the grizlie bushie beard of some saugie Saracen Butcher, and neuer surcease flaunting and firking it in fussian, till vnder the Vniuersities vnited hand & seale they bee enacted as Obsolete a cafe of Cockes-combes, as euer he was in Trinitie Colledge, that would not carry his Tutors bow into the field, because it would not edifie: or his fellow qui que codshead, that in the Latine Tragedie of K. Richard, cride, Ad vrbs, ad urbs, ad urbs, when his whole Part was no more, but Vrbs, urbs, ad arma, ad arma.

Shall I make a motion which I would not haue thee thinke I induce to flatter thee neyther, thou being not in my walke, whereby I might come to wash my handes with thee a mornings, or get a sprinkling or a brushing for a brybe: wilt thou commence and make no/more ado, since thou haft almost as much learning and farre more wit, than the two Brothers, or eyther of those profound qui mihi Discipulasses aboue mentioned?
Now verely (I perswade mee) if thou wouldst attempt it, not all the Gabriels betwixt this and Godmanchester, put together, wold make a more perpolite cathedral Doctor than thy selfe: for all language at thy fingers ende thou haft as perfect as Spruce, and nere a Dick Harvey, or cathedral Doctor of them all, can read a more smooth succinct Lipian Lecture of short haire, than thou ouer thy Barbers Chaire, if thou bee so disposed, nor stand and encounter all commers so constantly.

Dick, I exhort thee as a brother, be not a horfe to forget thy own worth: thou art in place where thou maist promote thy selfe, do not close-prison and eclipse thy vertues in the narrow glasse lant-horne of thy Barbers shop, but reflect them vp and downe the Realme: like to those prospectiuue glases which express not the similitudes they receive neere hand, but cast them in the ayre afarre off, where they are more clerely represented.

Commence, commence, I admonish thee, thy merits are ripe for it, & there haue been Doctors of thy Facultie, as Doctor Dodipowle for example:/ and here in London, yet extant viva voce to teftifie, Doctor Nott and Doctor Powle, none of which in notting and powling go beyond thee. To vtter vnto thee my fancie as touching those Neoterick tongues thou professest, in whose pronunciation old
Tooly and thou varie as much, as Stephen Gardineer, and Sir John Cheeke about the pronunciation of the Greeke tongue: loe, for a testifying incouragement how much I wish thy encrease in those languages, I haue here tooke the paines to nit and louze ouer the Doctours Booke, and though manie cholericke Cookes about London in a mad rage haue dis-membred it, and thruft it piping hot into the ouen vnder the bottomes of dowsets, and impiously prickt the torne sheetes of it, for bafting paper, on the outsides of Geefe and roafting Beefe, to keepe them from burning; yet haue I naturally cherisht it and hugd it in my bosome, even as a Carrier of Bosomes Inne dooth a Cheefe vnder his arme, and the pureft Parmasen magget Phrases therein, cull'd and pickt out to present thee with.

Read and peruse them ouer, as diligently as thou wouldft doo a charme against the tooth-ache: for this I can gospelly auouch, no sleight paynes hath the Doctour tooke in collecting them, / consulting a whole quarter of a yeare with Textors Epithites (which he borrowd of a frend of mine in Poules Churchyard) only to pounfe them out more poetically.

Be not self-wild, but insist in my precepts, and I will tutour thee so Pythagoreanly how to husband them in alcompanies, that euEn Willington* himselfe,

* In old MS. 'Williamson.'—G.
thy fellow Barbar in Cambridge, (who hath long borne the bell for finicall descanting on the Crates) shalbe constrained to worship and offer to thee.

Abruptly to breake into the bowels of this Index of bald inkhornisme, what faist thou for all thou A rag borrowed art reputed such an enigmatical linguisft from his owne dunghil. (vnder the doctors terme probatorie license bee it spoken, being a terme with him as frequent as standing vpon termes among lawiers), canst thou enter into the true nature of villanien by conniuence? I hold a groate thou canst not conter it. A word it is, that the Doctor lay a whole weeke and a day & a night, entranced on his bed, to bring forth, and on the Munday euening late, caufd all the bels, in the Parish where he then fioiournd, to be rong forth, for joy that he was deliuerd of it.

Repent, and be ashamed of thy rudenesse: O thou that hast made fo manie men winke whyles thou caft fuds in their eyes, and yet knowest not what / Connuience meanes. Ploddling and dunftically like a clowne of Cherry-hinton, basely thou beseecheft them to winke, whiles thou mak’ft a Tennis-court of their faces, by brick-walling thy clay-balls crosse vp and downe their cheekes: whereas if thou wert right orthographizd in the Doctors elocution, thou wouldft say in stead of,
I pray Sir winke, I must wash you, Sir, by your favour I must require your conmiuence.

Againe, it is thy custome, being sent for to some tall old finckanter, or stigmaticall bearded Master of Arte, that hath been chin-bound ever since Charles the ninths massacre in France, to rush in bluntly with thy washing bowle and thy nurfe-cloutes vnder thy cloake, and after a few scraping ceremonies, to ask if his Worship bee at leasure to be recreated.

_A malo in peius_, that is the meanest salutation that ere I heard: utterly thou bewrayest thy non-proficencie in the Doctors Paracelian rope-retorique. What a pestilence, a yong braine, and so poore and penurious in Conges? Rayfe thy concept on the trees, or rather than faile, new corke it at the heeles, before it shoulde thus walke bare-foote vp and downe the streetes.

Hence take thy Harueticall exordium, if thou wouldst haue thy conceit the worlds fauourite at first / dash, Omniscious and omnijufficient Master Doctor, (for so hee calls Cornelius Agrippa) will it please you to bee cosmologizd and smirkt?

Suppose a Bishop come to the Vniuersitie, as the Bishop of Linole ne somtimes to visit Kings Colledge, and the Bishop of Ely Saint Iohns, (whiles there was euer a bishop there,) a playne bishop (like Martin) at euerie word thou wilt terme him,
whereas if thou wert but one hower entred commons in Haruey de Oratore, A great Pontife or Demy-god in omnisufficiencie thou wouldst enstall him.

But to appose thee more dallyingly and familiarly. It is giuen out amongst Schollers, that thou haft a passing singular good wit: now to trie whither thou haft fo or no, let me heare what change of phraes thou haft to describe a good wit in, or how, in Pedagogue Tragotanto Doctors englifh, thou canst florish vpon it.

I feele thy pulses beat slowly alreadie, although thou beeft fortie mile off from mee, and this impotent anfwere (with much ado) droppes from thee, even as sweate from a leane man that drinks facke; namely, that thou thinkeft there cannot much extraordinarie descant be made of it, except it be to saie, such a one hath an admirable capacitie, an incomparable quick inuention, and a furmounting rich spirit aboue all men. Hah ha, a deßtitute poore fellow art thou, and haft mist mee nine score: goe, goe, get thee a caudle and keepe thy selfe warme in thy bed, for, out of queftion, thy spirit is in a consumption.

A rich spirit quoth a? nay then a spirit in the way of honestie too: loe this it is, to be read in nothing but in Barnabe Riches workes. Spend but a quarter fo much time in mumping vpon
Gabrielisme, and Ile be bound, bodie and goods, thou wilt not anie longer sneakingly come forth with a rich spirit and an admirable capacitie, but an enthusiastical spirit & a nimble entelechy. In the course of my Booke a whole catalogue thou shalt finde of all these Guiny phrases, to which, in zealous care of thy reformation, I referre thee.

*Dii boni, boni, quid porto?* What a large Diocesse of epiftling haue I here progresst through? The Summons to a generall Councell, with all the reasons mooing thereunto, or Tindalls Prologue before the New Testament, are but short Graces before meate, in comparison of this my immoderate Dedication. But the best is, if it be too long, thou haft a combe and a paire of sciffers to curtail it; or, if thou lift not stand so long about it, with a *Trinitie Colledge* rubber thou maist epitomize it extempore.

Mar/rie if thou long to heare the reason why I haue fo stretcht it on the tenter-hookes, forsooth it is a garment for the woodcocke Gabriel Harvey, and fooles, ye know, alwaies for the most part (especiallie if they bee naturall fooles) are futed in long coates; wherevpon I set vp my ref to shape his garments of the fame fize, that I might be sure to fit on his skirts.

Dick, no more at this time, but *Nos-da diu cata-why*, and all the recompence I can make thee for
being, like a Chancery Declaration, so tiring troublesome vnto thee, is this, if thou wilt haue the Doctour for an Anatomie, thou shalt; doo but speake the word, and I am the man will deliuer him to thee to be scocht and carbonadoed: but in anie case speake quickly, for heere he lies at the last gaspe of surrendering all his credit and reputation.

Thy Friend Tho. Naſhe,
if thou beſt fœ, Dick, to
all the generation of
the Harueys.
To all Christian Readers, to whom these
Presents shall come.

WELL said, my Maisters, I perceyue there cannot
a new Booke come forth but you will have
a fling at it. Say, what are you reading? Nashe
against Haruey. Fo, thats a stole ieaf, hee hath
been this two or three yeare about it. O good
brother Timothie, rule your reason, the Mill
grundyes more mens corne than one: and those that
resolutely goe through with anie quarrell, must set
all their worldly busines at a stay, before they draw
it to the point. I will not gainsay but I have
cherisht a purpose of perpetuating this Liff-lander
Bogarian so long time as ye speak of, and that like
the long snouted Beast (whose backe is Castle proofe)
carrying her yong in her wombe three yere ere she
be deliuered, I haue been big with childe of a common
place of revenge, ever since the hanging of Lopus:
but to say I plodded upon it continually, and used
in all this space nothing but gall to make inke with,
is a lye befitting a base swabberly lowtie failer, who
hauing been neuer but a month at sea in his life,
and duckt at the maine yards arme twice or thrice
for pilferie, when hee comes home if sweares hee hath
been feuenteene yeares in the Turkes gallyes.

Patientia veftra, there is not one pint of wine,
more than the iuft Bill of costs and charges in
setting forth, to be got by anie of these bitter-fauced
Inuectiues. Some foolish praise perhaps we may
meete with, such as is affoorded to ordinarie Iefters
that make fport: but otherwise we are like those
fugitiue priefts in Spaine and Portugall, whom the
Pope (verie liberally) prefers to Irifh Bifhoprickes,
but allows them not a pennie of anie living to
maintaine them with, faue onely certaine Friers to
beg for them.

High titles (as they of Bishops and Prelates) fo
of Poets and Writers, we haue in the world, when
in head of their begging Friers, the fire of our wit
is left, as our onely laft refuge to warme vs.

Haruey and I (a couple of beggers) take upon
us to bandie factions, and contend like the Vrfini and
Coloni in Roome: or as the Turkes and Persians
about Mahomet and Mortus Alli, which should bee
the greatest: and (with the Indians) head our
inventions arrowes with Vipers teeth, and steep
them in the bloud of Adders and Serpents, and spend
as much time in arguing pro & contra, as a man
might haue found out the quadrature of the Circle
in: when all the controuersie is no more but this,
he began with mee, and cannot tell how to make an end; and I would faine end or rid my hands of him, if he had not first begun.

I protest I do not write against him because I hate him, but that I would confirme and plainly shew, to a number of weake beleevers in my sufficiencie, that I am able to answere him: and his frends, and not his enemies let him thanke for this heauie load of disgrace I lay upon him, since theyr extreame disabling of mee in this kinde, & urging what a triumph he had ouer me, hath made me to ransacke my fiendish more than I would.

This I will boldly say, looke how long it is since he writ against me, so long haue I giuen him a leaue of his life, & he hath onely held it by my mercie.

His Booke, or Magna Charta, which against M. Lilly & me he addresse, I hauing kept idle by me, in a by settle out of sight amongst old shoes and bootes almost this two yere, and in meere pitie of him would neuer looke upon it but in some calme pleasing humor, for feare least in my melancholy too cruelly I should haue martyr'd him.

And yet, though vengeance comes not Zephiris & hirundine prima, in the first springing prime of his schisme and heresie, let him not looke for one of Frier Tecelius Pardons, he that (as Sleidane reports) first stird vp Luther, pronouncing from the Pope free salarie indulgence to anie man, though
he had deflowered the Virgine Mary, and absolution as well for sines past as sines to come: for I meane to come upon him with a tempest of thunder and lighting, worse than the stormes in the West Indies cald the Furicanoes, and compleate arme more words for his confusion, than Wezell in Germanie is able to arme men, that hath absolute furniture for three hundred thousand at all times.

Gentlemen, what think ye of this sober mortified stile? I dare say a number of ye haue drawn it to a verdit alreadie: and as an Elephants forelegs are longer than his hinder, so you imagine my former confutation wilbe better than my later. Nay, then, Aelopum non attriuiftis, you are as ignorant in the true mouings of my Muse as the Astronomers are in the true mouings of Mars, which to this day they could never attaine too. For how euer, in the first setting foorth, I march faire and softly, like a man that rides upon his owne horse, and like the Caspian sea seeme neither to ebbie nor flow, but keep a smooth plain forme in my eloquence, as one of the Lacedemonian Ephori, or Baldwin in his morall sentences (which now are all snatcht vp for painters posies): yet you shal see me, in two or three leaues hence, crie Heigh for our towne greene, and powre hot boyling inke on this contemptible Heggledepgs barrain scalp, as men condemned for stealing by Richard de corde Lions law, had hot boyling pitch powrd on their
heads, and feathers strewd uppon, that wherefoever they came, they might be knowne.

I know I am too long in preparing an entrance into my Text, fed tandem denique to the matter and the purpose.

The method I meane to use, in persecuting this Peter Maluenda and Sinibaldo Craisko, is no more but this.

Memorandum, I frame my whole Booke in the nature of a Dialogue, much like Bullen and his Docttor Tocrub, whereof the Interlocuters are these:

Imprimis, Senior Importunio, the Opponent.

The second, Grand Consiliadore, chiefe Censor or Moderator.

The third, Domino Bentiuole, one that stands, as it were, at the line in a Tennis-court, and takes euerie ball at the volly.

The fourth, Don Carneades de boone Compagniola, who like a busie Countrey Justice sits on the Bench, and preacheth to theeues out of their own confessions: or rather, like a Quartermaster or Treasurer of Bride-well, whose office is to giue so many strokes with the hammer, as the publican unchaft offender is to haue stripes, and by the same Tuballs musique to warn the blue-coate Correttor when he should patience and surcease: so continually, when by Senior Importuno the Doctor is brought to the Croffe, Don Carneades sets downe what proportion of justice is to
be executed upon him, and, when his backe hath bled sufficient, giues a signall of retrayt.

Neither would I haue you imagine that all these personages are fained, like Americke Vesputius, & the rest of the Antwerpe Speakers in Sir Thomas Moores Utopia: for, as true as Bankes his Horse knowes a Spaniard from an Englishman, or there went vp one and twentie Maides to the top of Boston Steeple, and there came but one downe againe, so true it is that there are men which have dealt with me in the same humour that heere I shaddow. In some nooke or blind angle of the Black-Friers you may suppose (if you will) this honest conference to bee held, after the same manner that one of these Italionate conferences about a Duell is wont solemnly to be handled, which is, when a man, being specially toucht in reputation, or challenged to the field upon equal tearmes, calls all his frends together, and askes them their advice how he should carrie selle in the action.

Him that I tearme Senior Importunio is a Gentleman of good qualitie, to whom I rest manie waies beholding, and one (as the Philosophers say of winde that it is nothing but aire vehemently moued) so hath he neuer ceast, with all the vehemence of winde or breath that he hath, to incite and mooue me to win my spurre in this iourney.

Vnder Grand Consiliadore, I allude to a graue reuerend Gimnosophist (Amicorum amicissimus, of all
my Frends the most zealous) that as Aesculapius built an Oracle of the Junne at Athens, so is his Chamber an Oracle or Convocation Chappell of sound counsaile, for all the better sort of the Jonnes of understanding about London, and (as it were) an usuall market of good fellowship and conference.

Hee alfo (as well as Senior Importuno) hath dealt with me very importunately, to employ all my Forces in this Expedition, and as Hippocrates preserued the Citie of Coos from a great plague or mortalitie (generally dispersed throughout Greece) by perswading them to kindle fires in publique places, whereby the aire might be purified: so hath hee (in most fervent deuotion to my well dooing) unceffantly perswaded me to preserue my credit from iadish dying of the scratches, by powerfull through enkindling this Pinego Rimonos everlafting fire of damnation.

For Domino Bentiuole and Don Carneades de bonne compagniola, they be men that haue as full shares in my loue and affection as the former.

The antecedent of the two, besides true resoluation and valure (wherewith he hath ennobled his name extraordinarie) and a ripe plesant wit in conuerſing, hath in him a perfect unchangeable true habit of honestie, imitating the Arte of Musique, which the Professours thereof affirme to be infinite and without end.

And for the subsequent or hindermost of the paire,
who likewise is none of the unworthiest retainers to Madame Bellona, hee is another Florentine Poggius for mirthfull sportiue conceit & quick invention, ignem faciens ex lapide nigro, (which Munster in his Cosmography alledged, for the greatest wonder of England) that is, wresting delight out of aniething. And this over and above I will give in evidence for his praise, that though all the ancient Records and Presidents of ingenuous Apotheqs and Emblemes were burnt, (as Polidore Virgill in King Harry the eights time burnt all the ancient Records of the true beginning of this our Ile, after hee had finished his Chronicle) yet out of his affulent capacitie they were to be renewed and reedified farre better.

These four with myselfe, whom I personate as the Respondent in the last place, shall (according as God wil give them grace) clap up a Colloquium amongst them, and so schoole my gentle Comrade, or neighbour, Quixistle in some few short principles of my learning and industrie, that (I doubt not) by that time they haue concluded and dispatcht, with him, my Gorboduck Huddleduddle will gladly (on his knees) resigne to mee his Doctourship; and as Antisthenes could not beate Diogenes away from him, but he would needs be his scholler whether he would or no: so shall I haue him haunt me vp and downe to be my prentife to learne to endite, and doo what I can, I shall not be shut of him.
TO THE READER.

This is once, I both can and will presently of this tedious Chapter of contents, least, whereas I prepared it as an antipast to whet your stomacks, it cleane take away your stomacks, and you surfeit of it before meate come: wherefore, onely giuing you this one caueat to obserue in reading my Booke, which Aristotle prescribes to them that read Histories, namely, that they bee not nimis credulos aut incredulos, too rash or too flow of beleefe, and earnestly commending me to Qui cytharum neruis, & neruis temperat arcum, the melodious God of Gam vt are, that is life and sinnewes in euerie thing; as also to Ioues ancient trustie Roger, friking come aloft sprightly Mercury, that hath wings for his moustachies, wings for his ey-browes, wings growing out of his chinne like a thorough haire, wings at his armes, like a foales coate with foure elbowes, wings for his riding bases, wings at his heeles in stead of spurres, and is true Prince of Wingan-decoy in euerie thing, and desiring him to inpire my pen with some of his nimblest Pomados and Sommersets, & be still close at my elbowe, since now I haue more use of him than Alchumists, in loue and charitie I take my leaue of you all, at least of all such as heere meane to leaue and read no further, and haft to the launching forth of my Dialogue.

N. III.
Haue with you to Saffron-walden.

DIALOGUS.

Interlocutores, Senior Importuno, Grand Consiliadore, Domino Bentiuole, Don Carneades de bonne compagniola, Piers Pennileffe Respondent.

Importuno.

HAT, Tom thou art very welcome. Where haft thou bin this long time; walking in Saint Faiths Church vnder ground, that wee neuer could see thee? Or haft thou tooke thee a Chamber in Cole-harbour, where they liue in a continuall myst, betwixt two Brew-houfes?

Consili: Indeed, we haue mist you a great while, as well spiritually as corporally; that is, no leffe in the absence of your workes, than the want of your companie: but now, I hope, by your prefence you will fully satisfie vs in either.
Bentioule: Nay, I would he would but fully satisifie and pay one, which is the Doctor: for this I can assure him, he is run farre in arrearages with expectation, & to recouer himselfe it wilbe verie hard, except hee put twice dubble as much aqua fortis in his inke as he did before.

Carnead: No aqua fortis, if you loue me, for it almost povsoned and spoyled the fashion of Stones the foole nose; and would you haue it be the destruction and desolation of a Doctor Foole now? What, content your selfe: a messfe of Tewksbury mustard, or a dramme and a halfe of Tower-hill vinyger, will seeme a high festiuall banquet, and make a famous coronation shew on this forlorne Civilians hungry table.

Impor: Tush, tush, you are all for iest, & make him be more careles of his credit than he wold be, by thus contemning and debasing his Aduersarie. Will you heare what is the unied voyce and opinion abroad? Confidently they say, he is not able to answere him, he hath deferd it so long, & if he doo answere him, howsoever it be, it is nothing since hee hath been a whole Age about it, though I, for mine owne part, know the contrarie, & will engage my oath for him (if need be) that the moat of this time they thinke him houering ouer the neaft, he hath fat hatching of nothing but toies for priviate Gentlemen, &
neglected the peculiar busines of his reputation, that to deeply concerne[s] him, to follow vaine hopes and had I wift humours about Court, that make him goe in a thred-bare cloake, and scarce pay for boate hire. Often enough I told him of this, if he would haue bele'ud me; but at length I am sure he findes it, and repents it all too late. In no companie I can come, but euerie minute of an howre, because they haue taken speciall notice of my loue towards him, they still will be tormenting me with one queftion or another, of what he is about, what means he to be thus retchles of his fame, or whither I am sure those things which are past vnder his name heretofore were of his owne dooing, or to get an opinion of wit hee vfed some other mans helpe vnder hande, that nowe hath utterly giuen him ouer and forfaken him, whether he be dead or no, or forbidden to write, or in regard he hath publifht a treatise in Diuinitie makes a conscience to meddle any more in these controverfies? with a thousand other like idle interrogatories: whereto I anfwere nothing els, but that he is idle and new fangled, beginning many things but soone wearie of them ere hee be halfe entred, and that hee hath too much acquaintance in London euer to doo any good, being like a Curtezan that can deny no man, or a graue commonwealths Senatour that
thinkes he is not borne for himselfe alone; but as old Laertes in Homers Odyssea, Dum reliqua omnia curabat, seipsum negligebat, caring for all other things else, lets his owne estate at fixe and feauen. Judge you, whom he takes for his best friends, what the end of this will be. A disgraced and condemned man he liues whiles Harvey thus liues unanswered, worse than he that hath peaceably and quietly put vp an hundred bastinadoes, or suffred his face to be made a continual common wall for men to spit on. Spittle may be wip't off, and the print of a broken pate, or bruse with a cudgell quickly made whole and worn out of mens memories, but to be a villain in print, or to be imprinted at London the reprobatest villain euer went on two legs, for such is /Gabriell Scurueies (as in thy other booke thou termest him) his wites malicious testimony of thee, with other more rascally hedge rak't vp termes, familiar to none but roguish morts and doxes, is an attainder that will sticke by thee for euer. A blot of ignominie it is, which though this age or, at the utmost, such in this age as haue conquer'd or are acquainted with thee, hold light and ridiculous, and no more but as a Bulls roaring and bellowing, and running horne mad at euery one in his way, when he is wounded by the Dogges, and almost bayted to death: yet there is an age to come,
which, knowing neither thee nor him, but by your feuerall workes judging of either, will authorifie all hee hath belched forth in thy reproach for found Gospell, since as the prouerbe is, *qui tacet consentire videtur*, thou holding thy peace, and not confuting him, seemes to confesse and confirme all whereof hee hath accused thee, and the innocent, vnheard, doo perish as guilty. Deceiue not thy selfe with the bad sale of his bookes, for though in no other mans handes, yet in his owne Deske they may bee founde after his death, whereby, while Printing lafts, thy disgrace may laft, & the Printer (whose Copie it is) may leave thy infamie in Legacie to his heyres, and his heyres to their next heyres, successiuely to the thirteenth and fourteenth generation, *Cum Privilegio*, forbidding all other to Print those lewd lying Recordes of thy scandall and contumely, but the lineall off-spring of their race *in sempiternum*. Haft thou not heard howe *Orpheus* wrote in the 2700. age of the world, whereas it is now 5596. and yet his memorie is fresh, his verses are extant, whereas all the Kings, that raignd and furuiude at that time, haue not fo / much as the first letter of their names to posterity commended: the very same is thy cafe with those in *Germanie*, which being executed are neuer buried. Consider and deliberate well of it, and if it worke not effectually with thee I know
not what will. Neither, if thou beest so sencelesse that thou wilt not let it finke into thee, doo I hold thee worthy to be any thing but the finke of contempt, to be excluded out of all men of worths companies, & counted the abiest scumme of all Poets and ballet-makers.

Respond: So you haue said sir. Now, let mee haue my turne another-while, to counterbuffle and beate backe all those ouerthwart blowes wherewith you haue charged me.

Benti: No reason to the contrarie, but in any case be not chollerick, since the most of those speeches he hath vttred my owne eares can witnesse to bee true, when as at diuers great meetings, and chiefe Ordinaries, I haue, Champion-like, tooke thy part, and euery one obieected and articled against thee, much after the same forme he hath expressed.

Respond: Will you haue patience, and you shall heare me expressely and roundly giue him his quietus est? To the first, wherein he concludes I am not able to answere him because I haue deferd it so long; I answere that it followes not, in so much as many men that are able to pay their debts, doo not alwaies discharge and pay them presently at one push; and secondly, or to the second lye, where he saith, and I doo answere him it is nothing, since I haue beene a whole
age about it. If I lift, I could proue his affertion
to bee vnnder age: but thats all one, I am content
my witte should / take vppon it antiquitie this
once, and nothing else in my defence I will
alledge, but Veritas Temporis filia, it is onely
time that reuealeth all things: wherefore, though
in as short time as a man may learne to run at
Tilt, I could haue gone thorough with inuention
inough to haue run him thorough & confounded
him, yet I muft haue some further time to get
perfect intelligence of his life and conuerfation,
one true point whereof, well fet downe, wil more
excruciate & commacerate him, than knocking
him about the eares with his owne file in a
hundred sheetes of paper. And this let me
informe the Iury ouer and aboue, that age is no
argument to make anie thing ill: & though
graybeard drumbling ouer a Discoursfe be no
crime, I am subiect too, yet in the behalfe of
the crazed wits of that famp, I will vphold, that
it is no vpright conclusion to fay whatfoeuer is
long laboured is lowfie and not worth a ftraw ;
since by that reafon you might conclude Dianas
temple at Ephesus to haue been a finking Doue-
cote or a Hog-fyt, because it was 220. yere in
building by the Amazons. Any time this 17. yere
my aduerfary, Frigius Pedagogus, hath laid waste
paper in pickle, and publisht some rags of treatifes
against Master Lilly and mee, which I will iustifie haue lyne by him euer since the great matches of bowling and shooting on the Thames vpon the yce. But for my part, trie mee who will, and let anie man but finde mee meate and drinke, with the appurtenances, while I am playing the paper ftainer, and fishing for pearle in the bot- tome of my tar-boxe, and but free me from those outward encumbrances of cares that overwhelme mee, and let this Paralitick Quacksaluer fill ten thousand tunnes with fcele/rata sinapis, shrewifh, snappifh mustard, as Plautus calls it, or botch and cobble vp as manie volumes as he can betwixt this and domesday, and he shall see I will haue euery one of them in the nofe straight, and giue as fuddaine extemporall anfweres, as Pope Siluefters or Frier Bacons brazen head, which he would haue fet vp on the Plain of Salisbury. As touching the vain hopes, and had I wift Court humours, which you say I follow, there is no Husbandman but tills and sowes in hope of a good crop, though manie times hee is deluded with a bad Harueft. Court humours, like cutting of haire, must either bee obserued when the Moone is new or in the full, or else no man will haue his hands full that gleanes after them. Not vnlikely it is they so question you about the cause of my long stay, and their
wits being dull frozen, and halfe dead for want of matter of delight, (whereof Poules Churchyard was neuer worfe fuelled) like those in Florida or divers Countreyes of the Negroes, that kindle fire by rubbing two sticks one against another; so to recreate and enkindle their decayed spirits, they care not how they set Haruey and mee on fire one against another, or whet vs on to consume our selues. But this Cock fight once past, I vow to turne a new leafe, and take another order with them, resoluing to take vp for the Word, or Motto, of my patience, Perdere posse sat est, it it is enough that it is in my power to call a Sessions and trufe him vp when I lift, concluding with the Poet, Dum desint hostes, desit quoque causa triumphi, as long as we have no enemies to trouble vs, it is no matter for anie Triumphs or bonfires: and as it was faide of the blacke Princes soouldiers, that they cared for no spoyle but gold and siluer, or / feathers, so euer after I will care for no conquest or victorie, which carries not with it a present rich possibilitie of rayfing my decayed fortunes, and Cauallier flourishing with a feather in my cappe (hey gallanta) in the face of enuiie and generall Worlds opinion. As newfangled and idle, and prostituting my pen like a Curtizan, is the next Item that you taxe me with; well it may and it may not bee so, for neither will
I deny it nor will I grant it; onely thus far Ile goe with you, that twice or thrife in a month, when res est angustia domi, the bottome of my purse is turned downeward, & my conduit of incke will no longer flow for want of reparations, I am faine to let my Plow stand still in the midft of a furrow, and follow some of these newfangled Galiardos and Senior Fantasticos, to whose amorous Villanellas and Quiipaffas, I prostitute my pen in hope of gaine, but otherwise there is no newfanglenes in mee but pouertie, which alone maketh mee so vnconstant to my determined studies; nor idlenesfe, more then discontented idle trudging from place to place, too and fro, and profecuting the meanes to keep mee from idle-nesfe. My Doctour Vanderhulk, peraduenture, out of this my indigent confeffion may take occasion to work piteously: It is no matter, I care not, for many a faire day agoe haue I proclaimed my selfe to the worlde Piers Pennileffe, and sufficient petigrees can I shewe to prooue him my elder brother. What more remaineth behinde of the condemned estate I stand in, till this Domine Dewse-ace be confwapped, & sent with a paire of newe shooes on his feete, and a scrowle in his hand to Saint Peter, like a Ruffian when he is buried: /as also of the immortality of the Print, & how though not this age, yet another age three
years after the building vp the top of Powles steeple, may bafull and infamize my name when I am in heauen, & shall neuer seele it, in foure words I will defeate, and lay desolate. Forsooth (bee it knowne vnfo you) I haue prouided harping yrons to catch this great Whale: and this Gobin a grace ap Hannikin, by Gods grace shall be met and combatted. Yet this I muft tell you, sir, in the way of friendship twixt you & mee, your graue fatherly forecasting Forafmuches, and vrging of posteritie and after ages, whose cradle makers are not yet begot; that they may doo this, and they may do that, is a ftaile imitation of this heathen Gregorie Huldricke, my Antigonift. And thus, I truft all reckonings are euen twixt you and mee.

Impor: Nay, I promise thee, thou haft giuen me my Pasport, and I know not what to say, now thou sayft he shall be answerd.

Benti: I am very glad, for thy credits fake, that thou perfeuer in that purpose, but more glad would I bee to see it abroad and publisht.

Resp: Content your felfe, so you shall; although it hath gone abroad with his Keeper any time this quarter of this yeare, but as profonde a reason as any I haue alleag'd yet, of the long flay and keeping it backe, was, that I might fulfill that olde verse in Ouid, Ad metam properate simul tunc
plena voluptas, as much to say as march together merrily, and then there will be lusty doings and found sport, so did I stay for some company to march with me, that we might have made round worke, and gone thorough fitch: but since all this while they come not forwarde according to promise / but breake their daye, as the King of Spaine did with Sebastian King of Portugall, about his meeting him at Guandulopeia, when they should have gone together to the Battaile of Alcazar, veiah diabolo Saint George, and a tickling pipe of Tobacco, and then pell mell, all alone have amongst them, if there were ten thousand of them.

Carn: Faith well said, I perceiue thou fearest no colours.

Resp: Whatsoever I feare, Ile force Jenkin Heyderry derry both to feare and beare my colours, and suite his cheekes (if there be one pimple of shame in them) in a perfecter red, than any Venice dye.

Consil: Vengeance on that vnluckie dye, may hee crie, like a swearing shredded gamester, that lootheth at one set all that euer he is worth: but I prythee (in honestie) if thou haft anie of the papers of thy Booke about thee, shew vs some of them, that like a great Inquest, we may deliuer our verdit before it come to the Omnigatherum of Towne and Countrey.
Respon: Then gather your felues together in a ring, and, Grand Consiliadore, be you the grand commander of silence (which is a chiefe Office in the Emperour of Russiaes Court), for heere it is in my sleeue that will bethue him: yet, if I be not deceived, some part of the Epistle I haue read to you heretofore.

Import: I, to the Barber: such a thing I well remember, but what Barber it was, or where he dwelt, directly thou neuer toldst vs.

Respon: Yes, that I haue both towld and bookt him too: neuertheles (for your better understand) know it is one Dick Litchfield, the Barber of Trinity Colledge, a rare ingenuous odde merry Greeke, who (as I haue heard) hath translated my Piers Peniileffe into the Macaronicall tongue: wherein I wist hee had been more tongue-tide, since, in some mens incensed judgements, it hath too much tongue alreadie, being aboue 2 yeres since maimedly translated into the French tongue, and in the English tongue so rascally printed and ill interpreted, as heart can thinke, or tongue can tell. But I cannot tell how it is grown to a common fashion amongst a number of our common ill liuers, that whatsoeuer tongue (like a spaniels tongue) doth not licke their aged foares and fawne on them, they conclude it to be an adders tongue to sting them: and
wheras wittie *Aesope* did buy vp all the tongues in the market hee could spie, as the best meate hee esteemed of, they (by all meanes possible), euen out of the buckles of theyr girdles, labor to plucke forth the tongs, for feare they should plucke in their vnfañate greedie paunches too ftraight.

*Carn:* O peace, peace, exercize thy writing tongue, and let vs have no more of this plaine English.

*Resp:* With a good will, agreed: &
like *Mahomets* angels in the *Alcheron*, that are said to haue eares stretching from one end of heauen to the other, let your attention be indefinite & without end, for thus I begin.

*Mascula virorum,* Saint *Mildred* and Saint *Agapite!* more Letters yet from the Doctör? nay then, we shal be sure to haue a whole *Grauefend* Barge full of Newes, and heare soundly of all matters on both eares. Out vpon it, heere's a packet of Epiftling, as bigge as a Packe of Woollen cloth, / or a stack of salt-fish. Carrier, didst thou bring it by wayne, or on horse-backe? By wayne, sir, & it hath crackt me three axeltrees, wherefore I hope you will consider me the more. *Heauie* newes, *heauie* newes, take them againe, I will neuer open them. Ah quoth he (deepe fighing)
to mee, I wot, they are the heauieft, whose Cart hath cryde creake vnnder them fortie times euerie furlong: wherefore, if you bee a good man, rather make mud walls with them, mend high wayes, or damme vp quagmires with them, than thus they fhuld endammage mee to my eternall vn-dooing. I, hearing the fellow fo forlorne and out of comfort with his luggage, gaue him his Charons Naulum, or ferry three half pence, & fo dismift him to go to the place from whence he came, and play at Lodum. But when I came to vnrip and vnbumbat this Gargantuan bag-pudding, and found nothing in it but dogs-tripes, swines liuers, oxe galls, and sheepes gutts, I was in a bitterer chafe than anie Cooke at a long Sermon when his meate burnes. Doo the Philosophers (saiđ I to my selfe) hold that letters are no burden, & the lighteft and easieft houfhold fluffe a man can remooue? Ile be sworne vpon Anthonie Gueuaras golden Epiftles, if they will, there’s not so much toyle in remouing the fiedge from a Towne, as in taking an inuenorie furuay of anie one of them. Letters doo you terme them? they may be Letters patents well enough for their tedioufnes: for no lecture at Surgeons Hall vpon an Anatomie, may compare with them in longitude. Why, they are longer than the Statutes of Clothing, or the Charter of London.

N. III.
Will ye haue the simple truth, without any deuices or playing vpon it? Gabriell Haruey, my ftale Gull, & the onely / pure Orator in fenfeles riddles or Packftonisme, that euer this our little shred or separate angle of the world suckled vp, not content to haue the naked scalp of his credit new couered with a false periwig of commendations, and fo returne to his fathers house in peace, and there sustaine his hungry bodie with wythered scallions and greene cheefe, hath since that time deeply forsworne himself in an arbitrement of peace, & after the ancient custome of Scottifh amitie, vnawares proclaimed open warres a fresh in a whole Alexandrian librarie of wafte paper. Piers his Supererogation, or Nafhes Saint Fame, pretely & quirkingly he chriftens it; and yet not fo much to quirke or crosse me thereby, as to bleffe himfelfe and make his booke fell, did hee giue it that title: for hauing found, by much shipwrackt experience, that no worke of his, abso- lute vnder hys owne name, would passe, he vfed heretofore to drawe Sir Philip Sydney, Master Spencer, and other men of highest credit, into euerie pild pamphlet he set foorth; and now that he can no longer march vnder their Ensignes, (from which I haue vttelry chac'd him in my Foure Letters intercepted) he takes a new leffon out of Plutarch, in making benefit of his enemie,
& borrows my name, and the name of Piers Pennileffe (one of my Bookes), which he knew to be most saleable, (passing at the least through the pikes of sixe Impressions) to helpe his bedred stuffe to limpe out of Powles Churchyard, that else would haue laine unreprivably spittled at the Chandlers. Such a huge drifat of duncerie it is he hath dungd vp against me, as was neuer seen since the raigne of Auerrois. O tis an vnconscionable vaft gorbellied Volume, bigger bulkt than a Dutch Hoy, and farre / more boystrous and cumberfome than a paire of Swifser omnipotent galeaze breeches. But, it shuld seeme, he is asham’d of the incomprehensible corpulencie thereof himselfe, for at the ende of the 199. Page, hee beginnes with one 100 againe, to make it seeme little (if I lye you may look and convince mee); & in halfe a quire of paper besides hath left the Pages vnfigured. I haue read that the giant Antæus Shield askt a whole Elephants hyde to couer it, bona fide I vtter it, scarce a whole Elephants hyde & a half, would serue for a couer to this Gogmagog, Iewish Thalmod of absurdities. Nay, giue the diuell his due, and there an ende, the Giant that Magellan found at Caput sanítæ crucis, or Saint Christophers picture at Antwerpe, or the monſtrous images of Seſoftres, or the Aegiptian Rapſinates are but dwarfifes in com-
parison of it. But one Epistle thereof, to John Wolfe the Printer, I tooke and weighed in an Ironmongers scales, and it counterpoyseth a Cade of Herring, and three Holland Cheeses. You may beleue me if you will, I was faine to lift my chamber doore off the hindges, onely to let it in, it was so fulsome a fat Bonarobe and terrible Rounceuall. Once I thought to haue cald in a Cooper, that went by and cald for worke, and bid him hoope it about like the tree at Grays-Inne gate, for feare 't should burst, it was so beastly; but then I remembred mee the boyes had whoopt it sufficiently about the streets, and so I let it alone for that instant. Credibly it was once rumord about the Court, that the Guard meant to trie masteries with it before the Queene, and in stead of throwing the sledge or the hammer, to hurle it foorth at the armes ende for a wager. I, I, euery one maye ham/mer vpon it as they pleafe, but if they will hit the nayle on the head pat, as they shoule, to nothing so aptly can they compare it as Africke, which being an unbounded stretcht out Continent, equiva lent in greatness with most Quarters of the Earth, yet neuertheles is (for the most part) over-spred with barraine fands: so this his Babilonian towre, or tome of confutation, swelling in dimension & magnitude aboue all the prodigious commentaries and familiar Epistles
that euer he wrote, is notwithstanding, more drif, barraine, and sandie in substance, than them all. Perufe but the Ballet, In Sandon foyle as late befell, and you will be more soundly edified by fife parts. Sixe and thirtie sheetes it comprehendeth, which with him is but fife and thirtie full points; for he makes no more difference twixt a sheete of paper and a full point, than there is twixt two blacke puddings for a pennie, and a pennie for a paire of blacke puddings. Foule euill goe with it, I wonder you will prate and tattle of fife and thirtie full points, fo compendiously trust vp (as may bee) in fife and thirtie sheetes of paper, when as those are but the shortest proverbs of his wit; for he neuer bids a man good morrow, but he makes a speach as long as a proclamation; nor drinkes to anie, but he reads a Lecture of three howers long, De Arte bibendi. O tis a precious apothegmaticall Pedant, who will finde matter inough to dilate a whole daye of the first inuen- tion of Fy, fa, fum, I smell the bloud of an English-man: and if hee had a thousand pound, hee hath vowed to confume it euerie doyt, to dis- couer and fearch foorth certaine rare Mathematicall Experimentes; as for example, that of tying / a flea in a chaine, (put in the laft edition of the great Chronicle) which if by any induftrie hee could atchieue, his owne name beeing fo generally odious
throughout Kent and Christendome, hee would presently transforme & metamorphize it from Doctour Harvey to doctour Ty, (of which file there was a famous Musition some few yeres since) resoluing, as the last cast of his maintenance, altogether to liue by carrying that Flea, like a monster, vp and downe the countrey, teaching it to doo trickes, hey come aloft Jack, like an ape over the chaine. If you would haue a flea for the nonce, that you might keepe for a breeder, why this were a stateley flea indeede to get a braue race of fleas on: your fly in a boxe is but a drumble-bee in comparison of it; with no expence at all (on your chin like a witches familiar) you might feed it, and let the chaine hang downe on your breaf, like a state, greasie Courtiers chaine, with one strop. Alacke and weladay, too too inconsiderately adviised was this our Poeticall Gabriell, when hexameterly entranced, he cride out,

O blessed health, blessed wealth, and blessed abundance,
O that I had these three for the losse of 30 Commensments.

when he should haue exclaimd,

O that I had this flea for the losse of 30 Commensments.

Peraduenture, he thinkes thus slighthly to steale
away with a Flea in his eare, but I must flea his aſſes ſkin ouer his eares a little handsomer, ere wee part. Thoſe that bee fo disposed to take a view of him, ere hee bee come to the full Midſommer Moone, and raging Calen-tura of his wretchednes, here let them behold his liuely counterfet and portraiture, not in the pantofles of his prosperitie, as he was when he libeld againſt my Lord of Oxford, but in the single-soald pumpes of his aduer-fitie, with his gowne caſt off, vntruffing, and readie to beray himſelfe vpon the newes of the going in hand of my booke.

If you afke why I haue put him in round hose, that vnually weares Venetians? it is because I would make him looke more dapper & plump and round vpon it, wheras otherwife he looks like a caſe of tooth-pikes, or a Lute pin put in a fute of apparell. Gaze vppon him who lift, for, I tell you, I am not a little proud of my workmanſhip, and, though I
sai it, I haue handled it so neatly, and so sprightly, and withall ouzled, gidumbled, muddled, and drizled it so finely, that I forbid euer a Hanns Boll, Hanns Holbine, or Hanns Mullier of them all (let them but play true with the face) to amend it, or come within fortie foote of it. Away, away, Blockland, Truffer, Francis de Murre, and the whole generation of them will sooner catch the murre and the pofe tenscore times, ere they doo a thing one quarter so matterly.

Yea, (without Kerry merry buffe be it spoken) put a whole million of Iohannes Mabu-fusses of them together, and they shall not handle their matters at sharpe so handsomly as I.

*Painters* handling.

**Benti**: From sharpe to come to the poynt: as farre as I can learne, thou haft all the advantage of the quarell, fince both the first and laft firebrand of dissention betwixt you was toft by the Doctour.

*Respond*: Tossing (by your fauour) is proper to the sea; and so (like the sea) doth hee tosse water, and not fire.

**Benti**: That is toft, or cast water on fire: if hee did so, he is the wiser.

*Respon*: On a fire of sea-cole you meane, to make it burne brighter.

**Benti**: A fire that the sea will coole, or Haruey find water inough to quench, if you looke not too it the better.
Respon: I warrant, take you no care, Ile looke to his water well inough.

Imp: But me thought euen now thou contemndst him, because hee tost water and not fire; whereas in my judgement, there is not a hairs difference betwixt being burnd and being drownd, since death is the beft of either, and the paine of dying is not more tedious of the one than of the other.

Respon: O, you muft not conclude fo desperate, for euery toffing billow brings not death in the mouth of it: besides, if the worst come to the worst, a good swimmer may doo much, whereas fire *rapit omnia secum*, sweepeth cleane where it feazeth.

Importun: I, but haue you not heard that broken ppeece of a vene, *Currenti cede furori*; giue place to fire or furie, and you shall quickly fee it confume it felfe.

Respon: A ftale puddings end, by that reafon you may as well come vpon mee with *Tempus edax rerum, quid non consumitis anni?* As though there is anie thing fo eternall and permanent, that confumes and dies not after all his fire of life is spent. For mee, I know I fhall liue, and not die, till I haue digd the graues of all my enemies: and that the fire of my wit will not bee spent, till (as amongft the Samogetes and Chaldaeans) I get it to be worshipt as a god of those whom it moft cofounds: and as diuers of the *Aethiopians* curfe
the funne when it riseth, and worship it when it setteth; so, however they curse and raile vpon mee in the beginning, I will compell them to fall downe and worship mee ere I ceafe or make an end, crying vpon their knees Ponuloi nashe, which is, in the Russian tongue, Haue mercie vpon vs: but I will not haue mercie or be pacifide, till I haue left them so miserable, that very horse sshal hardly abstaine from weeping for them, as they did for the death of Caesar; and if they haue but euer a dog that lou'd them, he shall die for griefe, to view his mafters in that plight.

Confil: In anie cafe leave this big thunder of words, wherein thou vainly spendst thy spirits, before the push of the battaile; and if thou haft anie such exhaled heat of reuenge in the upper region of thy braine, let it lighten and flash pre-rently in thy aduerfaries face, and not a farre off threaten thus idely.

Respon: Threaten idely, said you? Nay sure, Ile performe as much as hee that went about to make the dyuing boate twixt Douer and Callis, and as lightning and thunder neuer lightly goe asunder, fo in my stile will I temper them both togither, mixing thunder with lightning, / and lightning with thunder, that is, in dreadfull terror with stripes, & found thrufts with lowd threats. Tell mee, haue you a minde to anie thing in the
Doctors Booke? speake the word, and I will helpe you to it vpon the naile; whether it bee his words, his metaphors, his methode, his matter, his meeters. Make your choyce, for I meane to vfe you most stately.

Carn: Then, good gentle Frend (if you will) let's haue halfe a dozen spare-ribs of his rethorique, with tart sauce of taunts correspondant, a mightie chyne of his magnificentesf elocution, and a whole furloyne of his substantialest sentences and similes.

Resp: And shall, I am for you; Ile serue you of the beft you may assure your selfe: with a continuat Tropologicall speach I will astonish you, all to bee-spiced & dredged with sentences and allegories, not haung a crum of any cost bestowed vpon it more than the Doctors owne cooquerie.

Import: Tropologicall! O embotched and truculent. No French gowtie leg, with a gamash vpon it, is so gotchie and boystrous.

Confi: It sounds like the ten-fold ecchoing rebound of a dubble Cannon in the aire; and is able to spoyle anie little mouth, that offers to pronounce it.

Resp: Gentlemen, take God in your minde, & nere feare you this word Tropologicall, for it is one of Dick Harueys sheepes trattells in his Lambe of God.
Imp: I, Dick Harueys, that may wel be; for I neuer heard there was more in him, than would hard and scant servue him to make a Collation: but for the Doctor, trie it who will, his ftitle is not easie to be matcht, being commended by diuers (of good judgement) for / the beft that ere they read.

Respond: Amongft the which number, is a red bearded thrid-bare Causalier, who (in my hearing) at an ordinarie, as he fat fumbling the dice after supper, fell into these tearmes (no talke before leading him to it): There is fuch a Booke of Harueys (meaning this his laft Booke againft mee) as I am a Souldiour and a Gentleman, I protest I never met with the like contriued pile of pure English. O it is deuine and moft admirable, & fo farre beyond all that euer he publisht heretofore, as day-light beyond candle-light, or tinsell or leafe-gold aboue arfedine; with a great many more excelfiue praifes he bestowed vpon it: which authentically I should haue beleued, if immediately vpon the nicke of it, I had not feene him shrug his shoulcers, and talk of going to the Bathe, and after, like a true Pandar (fo much the fitter to be one of Gabriels Patrons), grew in commending, to yong gentlemen, two or three of the moft detested loathfom whores about London, for peereles beauteous Paragons, & the pleafingefte wenches
in the world; wherby I guess, his judgement might be infected as wel as his body; & he that wold not stick so to extoll stale rotten lac'd mutton, will, like a true Millanovys, fucke figges out of an asses fundament, or doo anie thing. I more than halfe suspect those whom you preferre for the beft judgements, are of the fame stampe; or if they be not, I wil set a new stampe on their judgments, hauing (to let them see their dotage and error, and what his stile is they make such a miracle of) musterd together, in one galimafrie or short Oration, most of the ridiculous senseless sentences, finicall, flaunting phrares, and termagant inkhorne tearmes throughout his / Booke, and fram'd it in his owne praife and apologie, because I would cut his cloake with the Wooll, though Lilly and Nashe neuer so cry Non placet thereat. Auditors awake your attention, and here expect the cleare repurified soule of truth, without the leaft shadow of fiction; the vnflattered picture of Pedantisme, that hath no one smile or crinkle more than it shoul'd: for I deeply auow, on my faith and saluation, if he were a Doctor of gold, here in his owne clothes he shal appeare to you, & not so much as a knot to his winding sheete, or corner tip to the smallesi saleage of his garments I will infert; only a needle and thred to trufe vp his trinkets more roundly (vppon better aduice) I
am determined to lend him, in hope it may be his thred of life, and euen by that single bountie dubble stitch him vnto me to be my deuoted beadsman till death, but not a pinnes head or a moaths pallet roome gets he of anie farther contribution. Hem, cleare your throates, and spit soundly; for now the pageant begins, and the stuffe by whole Cart-loads comes in.

An Oration, including most of the mis-created words and sentences in the Doctors Booke.

Renowned and amicable Readers, from whom it is not concealed, that Silence is a flaue in a chaine, and the Pen the hot shot of the musket.

Benti: Marke, marke, a sentence, a sentence.

Orati.

that when the caitife Planet raigneth, of Punical war ther is no end, & of the counter-tenor of an offended Sirè no ela.

Carne: Theres two, keepe tally.

Orati.

Tell mee (I pray you) was euer Pegasus a cow in a cage, Mercury a mouse in a cheefe, Dexteritie a dog in a dublet, Ledgerdemaine a flow-worme, Vivaicitie a lazy bones, Eutelechie a flug-plum, Humanitie a
spittle-man, Rhetorique a dummerell, Poetrie a tumbler, Historie a banquout, Philosophie a broker?

Confili: I marry, now it workes.

Respon: I bely him not a word; iuft as it is there, in his owne text it comes together.

Orati.

Why should I then, that haue been an incorruptible Areopage,

Benti: Stay that fame Areopage, hee is a forreyner newe come ouer: let vs examine him if hee bee the Queenes friend or no, ere he passe.

Orati.

without anie pregnant cause, be thus prestigiouly bessedged, and marked with an Afteriske, by them that are superficicall in Theory?

Carne: On my vertuous chaftitie, & in veritie, pregnant, prestigious, superficicall and pretie.

Orati.

In manie extraordinarie remarkeable energeticall lines, and perfunctorie pamphlets, both in ambidexteritie and omnidexteritie, together with matters adiophorall, haue I disbalased my minde, & not let flip the leaft occasiozet of aduantage, to acquaint the world with my pregnant propositions, and resolute Aphorismes.

Confili: That word Aphorismes Greenes Exequutors may claime from him; for while hee
liu’d he had no / goods nor chattles in commoner vse than it.

Import: Away, away, I cannot be perswaded hee wold euer come forth with anie one of these balductum baftardly termes.

Respond: You cannot: then cannot I be perswaded that you cannot be perswaded; since I haue as much reason not to credit your bare affertion, where you say you are perswaded it is not so, as you to distrust my deep vehement proteftatiōs, wherein I wold perswade you it is so: but if none of these perswasions or proteftations may preuaile with your incredulitie, bring me to the booke, if you pleafe (the Doctours Booke subintelligitur) and that will soone resolue you.

Import: It shall not need, I beleue thee, since thou standst in it so seriously: yet I wonder thou setst not downe, in figures in the margent, in what line, page, & folio, a man might find euerie one of these fragments, which would haue much satisfied thy Readers.

Respond: What, make an Errata in the midft of my Booke, and haue my margent bescratcht (like a Merchants booke) with these roguish Arfë- metrique gibbets or flesh-hookes, and cyphers, or round oos, lyke pismeeres egges? Content your felfe, I will neuer do it: or if I were euer minded to doo it, I could not, since (as I told you some
few leaues before) in more than a quarter of that
his tumblrell of Confutation, he hath left the Pages
vnumerated; foreseeing by deuination (belike) that
I should come to disfigure them.

Consil: I warrant thee I, thou hast figur'd him
well enough as it is; and if thou hadst tooken the
paynes of quotations or figures, as he would have
thee, I doubt whether there be anie would ever
have bestowed so much / paines to conferre or
examine them.

Carnead: On forward good Piers Respondent
with your Oration, for I am hungrie vpon it; and
with this I haue heard alreadie, my appetite is
nothing stancht, but rather whetted.

Respond: Beare witnes my masters, if hee dye
of a surfet, I cannot doo withall, it is his owne
seeking, not mine: as long as I haue it, I am no
niggard of it, at all adventures I will set it before
him.

Oration.

Omitting (sicco pede) my encomias'ticall Orations,
and mercuriall and martiall discourses of the terribilitie
of war, in the actiue and cheualrous vaine, euery way
coparable with the Caualcads of Bellerophon, or Don
Alphosto d'Aualos, my Seraphicall visions in Queene
Poetrie, queint theorickes, melancholy proiefts, and
pragmaticall discourses; whose beau-desert, and rich
a'onomie, the inspiredest Heliconists & arch-patrons

N. III. 5
of our new Omnificans, haue not stickt to equipage with
the ancient Quinquagenarians, Centurions, and Chili-
arke: notwithstanding all which Idees of monstrous
excellencie, some smirking singularists, brag Reformists,
and glicking Remembrancers (not with the multiply-
ing spirite of the Alchumift, but the villanift) seeke
to be masons of infinite contradiction; they (I say)
with their frumping Contras, tickling interieffions,
together with their vehement incenfues and alleffiuies,
as if they would be the onely A per fe a's, or great
A's of puifiance, like Alexander (whom yet fome of
our moderne Worthies disdaine to haue fceptred the
eft Amen of valure), commenfe redoutable Monom-
achies againft mee, and the dead honnie-bee my
brother.

Bentiu: / A per fe, con per fe, tittle, eft, Amen!
Doft thou not feele thy felfe fpoyled? why, he
comes vpon thee (man) with a whole Horn-
booke.

Import: What a supernaturall Hibble de beane it
is, to call his brother a dead honnie-bee?

Consil: I laughd at nothing fo much as that
word Archpatrons. Goe thy wayes, thought I:
thou art a Ciuilian, and maff well fetch metaphors
from the Arches: but thou fhalt neuer fifh anie
monie from thence whileft thou liu'ft.

Carm: Troth, I would hee might for me (that's
all the harme I wifh him), for then we neede neuer
with the Playes at Powles vp againe, but if we were wearie with walking, and loth to goe too farre to seeke spord, into the Arches we might step, and hear him plead; which would bee a merrier Comedie than euer was old Mother Bomby. As for an instance: suppose hee were to solicit some cause against Martinists, were it not a iest as right sterling as might be, to see him stroke his beard thrice, & begin thus. Graue Heliconists, seraphicall Omniscians, & the only Centurions, Quinquagenarians and Chilarks of our time; may it please you to be aduertised, how that certaine smirking Singularists, brag Reformatists, and glicking Remembrancers, not with the multiplying spirit of the Alchumist, but the villanist, haue fought to be Majons of infinite contradiction, and with their melancholy proieists, frumping contras, tickling interiections, and vehement incensuies & allestives, in all pragmaticall terribilitie, commende redoubtable Monomachies against you, and the beau-desert & Iodes of your encomiasticall Church gouernment, and particular and peculiar aeconomies. O we shoule haue the Proctors / and Registers as busie with their Table-books as might bee to gather phrases, and all the boyes in the Towne would be his clients to follow him. Marry it were necessarie the Queenes Decypherer shoule bee one of the High Commissioners; for else other-while he would blurt out such Brachmannicall
fulde-fubs, as no bodie shoulde be able to vnderstand him.

Respon: You make too long glosses on the text, attend how it followes.

Oration.

But Mercury sublimed is some-way a coy & stout fellow.

Ben: Verie true, for it is a good medicine for the itch.

Oration.

and Spite as close a Secretarie as a Scummer,

Carnead: Secretarie Spite and Secretarie Scummer, giue me your hands: I beseech you, what Noble-men about Court doo you belong too?

Oration.

Resolution a forward mate, and Valour a braue man;

Bentiv: O braue man, will you buy a braue dog?

Oration.

Impudence and Slander, two arrant vagabonds.

Carnead: I crie you mercie, I alwaies tooke them for the two Brothers.

Oration.

The world neuer shuch a Scogin as now, and the diuell neuer shuch a knaue as now.

Bentiu: What a diuell ayles he to rayle so
vpvon a poore painfull diuell, that does for him all he can?

Respond: Whist, silence on euerie hand; for here is the verie S. Georges robes of rhetorique, a speach that I haue tooke vp by the lumpe, as it lies in his Booke.

Oration.

What's the saluation of Davuid Gorge? A Nullitie.

Carnead: What a piteous noyfe, like a sprit in a wal, doth he here make with his Nullities? I should sure run out of my wits, if one shoulde come to my chamber doore at midnight, with nothing but such a dismall note of A Nullitie, a Nullitie!

Oration.

Nay, be you Load-stones to exhale what I say.
Martin is a Guerra, Browne a browne-bill, & Barrow a wheel-barrow; Ket a kight, H. N. an o. k.; and to conclude, as the Wheele was an ancient Hieroglyphicke amongst the Aegyptians, so some tooles are false prophets.

Bentiu: Thats the caufe wee haue so manie bad
workmen now a daies: put vp a Bill against them next Parliament.

Import: But if he had said, manie men haue some tooles that are litle for their profit, he had hit the mark somewhat nearer.

Oration.
Iudas, the Gaulonite, in the raigne of Herod was a hot toast,
Carn: It cannot choose but he lou’d ale well, then.

Oration.
and present examples we haue, as hot as fresh, that he that hath time hath life.
Confil: In good time be it spoken.
Import: A good admonition to Musitions to keepe time with their instruments, if they be desirous to live long.

Oration.
Duke Allocer on his lustie cock-horse is a hot familiar,
Carnead: Let him but live in London halfe a yeare, and there be them that wil take him downe and coole him, were he twice as hot.

Oration.
and no such Arte memoratiue as the crab-tree deske:
Confil: No; what say you to a crab-tree cudgell? if it were well husbanded about his
shoulders, I thinke it would make him remember it time enough.

Oration.

for, vnder correction of the arte notorie be it spoken, enuie is a foaking register, and mortall fewde the claw of an adamant.

Import: Hath adamant such shapre clawes? that makes it hold yron so fast, when it hath it.

Respon: Harke, harke, how hee praifeth Sir Philip Sidney.

Oration.

Sweete Sir Philip Sidney, he was the Gentleman of curtefie and the very Esquire of induftrie?

Carnea: The Esquire of induftrie? O scabbed scald squire (Scythian Gabriell) as thou art, fo vnder-foot to commend the cleerest myrrour of true Nobilitie.

Confl: What a mischiefe does he taking anie mans name in his vlcerous mouth? that, being fo festred and ranckled with barbarifme, is able to rust and canker it, were it neuer fo resplendent.

Respon: / In all his praises he is the moft forespoken and vnfortunate vnder heauen, & those whom he ferventeft strues to grace and honour, he moft dihonors and disgraceth by some vncircumcised fluttifh epithite or other: and euen to talke treafon he may be drawn vnwares, and neuer
haue anie such intent, for want of discretion how to manage his words.

_Bent:_ It is a common scoffe amongst vs, to call anie foolish prodigall yong gallant, the gentleman or floure of curtesie; &c (if it were wel scand) I am of the opinion, with the same purpose hee did it to scoffe and deride _Sir Philip Sydney_, in calling him the Gentleman of curtesie, and the verie esquire of industrie.

_Respond:_ Poore tame-witted filly _Quirko_, on my conscience I dare excuse him, hee had never anie such thought, but did it in as meere earneft, as ever in commendation of himselfe and his brothers hee writ these two verfes;

_Singular are these three_, John, Richard, Gabriel Haruy,

_For Logique, Philosophie, Rhetorique, Astronomie._

as also, in like innocent innocent wel meaning, added he this that ensues.

_Oration._

_His Entelechy was fine Greece, and the finest Tuscanisme in graine._ Although I could tickle him with a contrarie president, where he casts Tuscanisme, as a horrible crime, in a Noble-mans teeth.

_Carnead:_ Bodie of mee, this is worse than all the rest, he sets foorth _Sir Philip Sidney_ in the verie style of a Diers Signe. As if hee should haue said:
HEERE WITHIN THIS PLACE IS ONE THAT DIETH ALL KINDE OF EN-TELECHY IN FINE GREECE, AND THE FINEST TVSCANISME IN GRAINE THAT MAY BEE, OR ANY COLOVR ELSE YE WOLD DESIRE. AND SO GOD SAVE THE QVEENE.

Bentiu. More Copie, more Copie, we leefe a great deale of time foe want of Text.

Imp. Apace, out with it; and let vs nere stand pausing or looking about, since we are thus far onward.

Oration.
But some had rather be a Pol-cat with a stinking firre, than a Muske-cat with gracious faavour.

Bentiu. I smell him, I smell him: the wrongs that thou haft ofred him are so intollerable, as they would make a Cat speake; therefore looke to it Nashe, for with one Pol-cat perfume or another, hee will poyson thee, if he be not able to anfwere thee.

Carnead. Pol-cat and Muske-cat? there wants but a Cat a mountaine, and then there would be old scratching.

Bentiu. I, but not onely no ordinarie Cat, but a Muske-cat, and not onely a Muske-cat, but a
Muskè-cat with gracious savour (which sounds like a Princes ftile Dei gratia). Not Tibault or Ifegrim, Prince of Cattes, were euer endow'd with the like Title.

Respon. / Since you can make so much of a little, you shall haue more of it.

Oration.
To utter the entrayles of a sphericall heart in few fillables, Muske is a sweete curtezan, and sugar and honey daintie hipocrytes.

Bentiu. O sweeter and sweeter, some bodie lend me a hand-kercher, that I may carry some home in my pocket for my little God-sonne.

Carnead. Madame Muske, if you be a curtezan (as the Doctour informes vs) sure you haue dreft a number of my friends sweetly, haue you not? But you were neuer otherwise like, for mans apparaile & womans apparaile, all was one to you; and some mysterie there was in it, that they alwayes cride, Foh, what a flinke is heere? and sptopt their noses when you came neere them. For your worships, Master Sugar & Master Honie, (be you likewife such daintie hipocrytes as he giues tefti- monie) I doubt not but at one time or other we shall taste you.

Respond. Stay, let me looke vpon it: I, it is the fame, right Ifenborough good, or neuer truft mee. A speach or sudden exclamation, which, after hee
had been in a deadly sound for fixe or feauen houres
(vpon what fear-procured sicknesse I leaue you to
imagine) was the first words vpon his reuiving he
vttered.

Oration.

O Humanitie my Lullius, and Diuinitie my Paracelsus.

Consil. As much to say, as all the humanitie he
hath, is gathered out of Lullius, and all his diuinitie,
or religion, out of Paracelsus.

Carnead. Let him call vpon Kelly, who is better
than / them both ; and for the spirites and soules
of the ancient Alchumists, he hath them so close
emprisoned in the fire purgatorie of his fornace,
that for the welth of the King of Spaines Indies, it
is not possible to release or get the third part of a
nit of anie one of them, to help anie but himselfe.

Import. Whether you call his fire Purgatorie or
no, the fire of Alchumie hath wrought such a pur-
gation or purgatory, in a great number of mens
purses in England, that it hath clean fir'd the out
of al they haue.

Respond. Therefore, our Doctor (verie well heere
towards the latter end of his Oration) comes in with
a cooling card.

Oration.

Cordially I could wish, that the pelting horne of these
sturres (according to the faciall law) were rebated,
wherby our populars might taste of some more plausible
Panegricall Orations, fine Theurgie, and profound essentiaall God-full arguments.

Carnead. Soft, ere I goe anie further, I care not if I draw out my purfe, and change some odde peeces of olde English for new coyne ; but it is no matter, vpon the Retourne from Guiana, the valuation of them may alter, and that which is currant now be then copper. Onely this word God-full goes with mee, if it be but to court a widdow in Christ, or holy sifter of ours with, that weares Thy spirit be with vs for the posie of her ring.

Oration.

But the arte of figgis had euer a dappert wit, and a deft conceit : Saint Fame giue him ioy of his blacke cole, & his white chalke.

Consil. | Saint Fame is one of the notorious nicke-names he giues thee, as also vnder the arte of figgis (to cleaue him from the crowne to the waflte with a quip) he shadowes Master Lilly : but if betwenee you you doo not fo chalke him vp for a Crimme & Maniquenbecke, and draw him in cole more artificially than the face in cole that Michaell Angelo and Raphaell Vrbin went to buffets about, I would you might be cole carriers or pioners in a cole-pit, whiles colliers ride vpon collimol cuts, or there be any reprifalls of purses twixt this and Cole-brooke.
Respond. Pacific your conscience, and leave your imprecations, we will bear no coales, never fear you. As for him whom (so artlesse and against the haire of anie similitude or coherence) hee calls the arte of figges, he shall not need long to call for his figs, for hee will bee choaked soone inough with them; they having lyne ripe by him ready gathered (wanting nothing but pressing) anie time this twelue month. For my owne proper person, if I doo not (in requitall of S. Fame) enfaint and canonise him for the famousest Paliard and Senior Penaquila, that hath breathed since the raigne of S. Tor, let all the droppings of my pen bee seazed vpon by the Queenes Takers for Tarre to dresse ships with. I tarry too trifling superfluously in the twittle cum-twattles of his Text: take it, with a wennent, altogether, if you will haue it.

Oration.

Embellishtly I can resolue them, here they shall not meete with chalke for cheese; and though some drinke oyle of prickes for a restorative, they shall have much adoo to void sirrype of Roses: for it is not euerie man's blab that casts a sheeps [eye] out of a calues head, and for ought I know, I see no reason why the Wheelwright may not be as honest a man and pregnant mechanician as the Cutler, the Cutler as the Drawer, the Drawer as the Cutter, and the Writer as the
Printer. And so I recommend every one and them all, to your curtesies.

Your mindfull debter,

Gabriell Haruey.

[Carnead.] Thou haft opprest vs with an Inundation of "Biscanisme"; and though we would faine haue made him ftand in a white sheet for his baudie oyle of pricks (a common receipt for the greene ficknes); as also examind his firrupe of roses, wherein Rose Flowers is beft experimented, yet time & tide (that ftaies for no man) forbids vs to tire any more on this carrion, being more than glutted with it alreadie.

Bentiv. But yet to giue him this one comfort at the parting, it had not been amiffe, that whereas he ftands in fuch feare of casting his sheeps eye out of his calues head, thou neuer meantst it, but if it were an oxes hee shou'd ftill keepe it, and rather thou wouldft enlarge it than empayre it.

Respond. I, make it vp a paire (I foweare) rather than hee shou'd bee vnprouided. Respond breuiter, Senior Importuno: haue not I comprehended all the Doctors workes brauely, like Homers Iliads in the compaffe of a nut-shell? Now where be our honorable Caualiers, that keepe fuch a prating and a gabrill about our Gabriell and his admirable ftile, (nothing fo good as Littletons, with his John a
Nokes, and John a Stiles) let them look to it I wold aduife them, for the course they take in / commending this course Himpenhempen Slampamp, this stale Apple-squire Cockledemoy, who, some 18 yeares since, when these Italianate carnation painted horse tayles were in fashion, in selfe fame fort was about (if his chamber fellow had not ouer-rulde him) to haue scutchaneled and painted his pickerdeuant, to make it trauer-like antick: this iadish course, this iauels course, this drumbling course, this dry brand course, if you perseuer and insift in, and on the toppe of asses buxkind eares, thus labour to build trophees of theyr praise, canonizing euerie Bol-shangles, the water-bearer, for a Saint, and the contemptibleft worlds diu-cloute for a Relique; inspiredly I prophecie, your endes will be Ale and Shorditch, that all preferment and good spirits will abandon you: and more, (to plague you for your apostata conceipts) ballets shalbee made of your base deaths, euene as there was of Cutting Ball.

Confil. Ho Ball, ho; in the name of God, whether wilt thou?

Respond. To Saffron-walden as faft as I can, though I goe a little way about.

Import. Unfortunat Gabriell, I am sorry for him, for he hath been a man of good parts.

Respond. Good parts? Ile name you one of
feauen times better parts than he, whom you and I and every one heere, haue knowen from our childhood.

_Import._ Who is that?

_Respond. In Speach_, with his eight Parts. But without further speach, that you may throghly be resolu'd what those good parts are, you enable the Doctor for, here haue I set downe his whole life from his infancie to this present 96, even as they vse in the beginning of a Booke / to set down the life of anie memorble ancient Author. Dispense with it though it drink some inck, or prodigally dispended manie Pages, that might haue been better employd; for if it yeeld you not sport for your money, at the same price shall you buye mee for your bond-flaue, that my Booke costs you.

_Carread._ On that condition, wee will make thee a leafe of our attention for three liues and a halfe, or a hundred lacking one.

_The life and godly education from his childhood of that thrice famous Clarke, and worthie Orator and Poet_ 

_Gabriell Harvey._

_Gabriell Harvey_, of the age of fortie eight or vpwards, (_Turpe fenes miles_, tis time for such an olde foole to leaue playing the fwash-buckler) was borne at _Saffron-walden_, none of the obscurest
Townes in Essex. For his parentage, I will say, as Polidore Virgill faith of Cardinall Wolsey, Parentem habuit virum probum, at lanium, he had a reasonable honest man to his father, but he was a butcher; so Gabriell Haruey had one Good-man Haruey to his father, a true subject, that paid scot and lot, in the Parish where he dwelt, with the best of them, but yet he was a Rope-maker: Id quod reminisci nolebat (as Polidore goes forward) ut rem utique persona illius indignam, that which is death to Gabriell to remember, as a matter euerie way derogatorie to his person, quare secum totos dies cogitabat, qualis esset, non unde esset; wherefore from time to time he doth nothing but turmoile his thoughts how to raise his estate, and inuent new petegrees, and what great Noble-mans bastard hee was likely to bee, not whose sonne he is reputed to bee.

Consl. Give me leaue before thou readest any further. I would not wish thee so to upbraid him with his birth, which if he could remedie it were another matter; but it is his Fortune, and Natures, & neither his fathers fault nor his.

Respond. Neither as his fathers nor his fault doo I vrgie it, otherwise than it is his fault to beare himselfe too arrogantly aboue his birth, and to conteinne and forget the house from whence he came; which is the reason that hath induced mee (aswell in this Treatise as my former Writings) to

N. III. 6
remember him of it, not as anie such hainous
discredit simpfly of it selfe, if his horrible insulting
pride were not:

Nam genus & proavos, & que non fecimus ipsi,
Vix ea nostra voco.

It is no true glorie of ours what our fore-fathers
did, nor are we to answere for anie sinnes of theirs.
Demosthenes was the sonne of a Cutler, Socrates of a
Midwife; which detracted neyther from the ones
elocuence, nor the others wisedom: (farre be it
that eyther in eloquence or wisedom I should
compare Gabriell to either of them.) Marry, for
Demosthenes or Socrates to be ashamed or take it in
high derifio (which they neuer did) the one to be
faiied to have a Cutler to his father, or the other that
hee had a Mid-wife to his mother (as Haruey doth
to have himselfe or anie of his brothers called the
sonnes of a Rope-maker, which by his own priuate
confeffion to some of my friends, was the onely
thing that moft set him a fire against me) I wil
iustify it, might argue thē or him more inferior &
despicable, / than anye Cutler, Mid-wife, or Rope-
maker. Turne ouer his two bookes he hath pub-
lished against me (whereon he hath clapt paper
Gods plentie, if that would preffe a man to death),
and see if in the waye of answere, or otherwise, he
once mention the word rope-maker, or come within
fortie foot of it: except in one place of his first booke, where hee nameth it not neither, but goes thus cleanly to worke, (as heretofore I haue set downe) though hee could finde no roome in the expence of 36 sheetes of paper to refute it: And may not a good sonne haue a reprobate to his father? (a Periphrasis of a Rope-maker, which (if [I] should shryue my selfe) I neuer heard before. This is once: I haue giuen him cause enough I wot to haue stumbled at it, and take notice of it; for where, in his first booke, hee cafts the begger in my dish at euerie third fillable, and so, like an Emperor, triumphs ouer mee, as though he had the Philosophers Stone to play at foot-bal with, & I were a poore Alchumist new set vp, that had scarce money to buy beechen coles for my fornace. In kind guerdon and requitall, I told him in Piers Pennileffe Apologie, That he need not be so lustie, if (like the Peacocke) he looke downe to the foule feete that upheld him, for he was but the sonne of a Rope-maker; and he would not haue a shoo to put on his feete, if his father had not traffique with the Hangman. And in another place, when he brought the Towne Scale or next Iustices hands (as it were) to witnes, that his father was an honest man; which no man denide or impaired anie further, than saying, He got his living backward, & that he had kept three sonnes at the Vniuersitie a long time; I ioynd issue
with them and confirmed it, & added, Nay which is more, three proud sones, that when they met the hang-man (their fathers best customer) would not put off their hatts to him; with other by-glances, to the like effect: which he silently over-skippeth, to withdraw men (lapwing-like) from his neast, as much as might bee. Onely hee tells a foolish twittle twattle boasting tale, (amidst his impudent brazen-fac'd defamation of Doctor Perne) of the Funerall of his kinsman, Sir Thomas Smith, (which word kinsman, I wonderd, he causd not to be set in great capitall letters), and how in those Obsequies he was a chiefe Mourner. I wis his father was of a more humble spirit; who, in gratefull lieu and remembrance of the hempen mysterie that hee was beholding too, and the patrons and places that were his trades chiefe maintainers and supporters, prouided that the first letter each of his sones names began with shoulde allude and correspond with the chiefe marts of his traffick, & of his proffession & occupation; as Gabriell, his eldeft sones name, beginning with a G for Gallowes, John with a I for Iayle, Richard with an R for Rope-maker; as much to say, as all his whole liuing depended on the Iayle, the Gallowes, & making of Ropes. Another brother there is, whose name I haue forgot, though I am sure it iumpes with this Alphabet. Iumpe or iarre they with me
as they fee caufe, this counfaile (if the cafe were mine) I would giue them, not to bee daunted or blanckt anie whit; had they ten hundred thousand legions of *hangum tuums* or *per collum pendere debes* to their fathers, and any should twit them or gaule with it neuer fo: but as *Agathocles* comming from a durt-kneading Potter to be a King, would (in memorie of that his firft voca / tion) be servued ever after, as well in earthen dishes as fumptuous royal plate; so, had they but one royall of plate or fixe pennie peeces amongst them, they shuld plat (what euery their other cheere were) to haue a falt eele, in resemblance of a ropes end, continuallye serv'd in to their tables; or if they were not able to be at fuch charges, let them cast but for a twopenny rope of onions euery day to be brought in, in stead of frute, for a closing up of their stomackes. It cannot doo amisse, it will remember them they are mortal, & whence they came, & whether they are to goe. Were I a Lord (I make the Lord God a vow) and were but the leaft a kin to this breath-strangling linage, I would weare a chaine of pearle brayded with a halter, to let the world fee I held it in no disgrace, but high glorie to bee descended howsoever: and as amongst the ancient *Aegiptians* (as *Maffarius de ponderibus* writes) there was an Instrument called *Funiculus*, containing 60 furlongs, wherewith they measured their fields and
their vineyards; so from the plough harness free to
the slender hempen twist that they bind vp their
vines with, wold I branch my alliance, and omit
nothing in the praise of it, except those two notable
blemishes of the trade of rope-makers, Achitophel
and Judas, that were the first that ever hangd
themselues.

Bentiv: Thereto the Rope-makers were but acci-
dentally accessarie, as any honest man may be, that
lends a halter to a thiefe, wherewith (unwitting to
him) he goes & steales a horfe: wherefore, however,
(after a sort) they may be said to have their hands
in the effect, yet they are free and innocent from the
cause.

Respond: As though the cause and the effect
(more than / the superfluous and the substance) can
bee seperated, when in manie things, causa fine qua
non is both the cause and the effect, the common
distinction of potentia non æstū, approving it selfe
verie crazed and impotent herein, since the pre-
misses necessarily beget the conclusion, and so
contradictorily the conclusion the premissses; a
halter including desperation, and so desperation
concluding in a halter; without which fatall con-
clusion and priuation, it cannot truly bee termed
desperation, since nothing is said to bee, till it is
borne, and despiece is never fully borne till it ceaseth to bee, and hath depriu'd him of beeing,
that first bare it and brought it forth. So that herein it is hard to distinguish which is most to be blamed, of the cause or the effect; the Cause without the effect being of no effect, and the effect without the cause neuer able to haue been. Such another paire of indiscernable twins and mutuall married correlatuiues are Nature & Fortune. As for example; If it be anie mans fortune to hang himselfe and abridg his naturall life, it is likewise natural to him (or allotted him by Nature) to haue no better fortune.

Carnead: Better or worfe fortune, I pray thee let vs heare how thou goest forward with describing the Doctor and his life and fortunes: and you, my fellow Auditors, I beseech you, trouble him not (anie more) with these impertinent Parentheses.

Respond: His education I wil handle next, wherein he ran through Didimus or Diomedes 6000. books of the Arte of Grammar, besides learnt to write a faire capitall Romane hand, that might well serue for a boone-grace, to such men as ride with their face towards/the horse taile, or set on the pillorie for coufnage or periurie. Many a copy-holder or magistrall scribe, that holds all his livinge by setting school-boies copies, comes short of the like gift. An old Doctor of Oxford shewed me Latine verses of his in that flourishing flantitanting goutie Omega fift, which he presented
vnto him (as a bribe) to get leaue to playe, when hee was in the heighth or prime of his Puer es cupidis atque doceri. A good qualitie or qualification, I promise you truely, to keepe him out of the danger of the Statute gainst wilfull vagabonds, rogues, and beggers. But in his Grammer yeares, (take me thus farre with you) he was a verie grace-leffe litigious youth, and one that would pick quarrells with old Gulielmus Lillies Sintaxis and Prosodia, euerie howre of the daye. A desperate stabber with pen-kniues, and whom he could not ouercome in disputation, he would be sure to break his head with his pen and ink-horne. His father prophecyde by that his ventrus manhood and valure, he would proue an other S. Thomas a Becket for the Church. But his mother doubted him much, by reason of certaine strange dreames she had when she was first quicke with childe of him, which wel she hoped were but idle swimming fancies of no conquence: till beeing aduisde by a cunning man (her frend, that was verie farre in her books) one time shee slept in a sheepes skinne all night, to the intent to dreame true, another time vnder a lawrell tree, a third time on the bare ground starke naked, and laft on a dead mans tomb, or graue-stone, in the church in a hot Summers after-noone; when, no barrel better herring, she sped euen as she did before.
For first she dreamed her wombe was turned to such another hollow / vessel full of disquiet fiends, as Salomons brazen Bowle, wherein were so manie thousands of diuels; which (deepe hidden vnder ground) long after the Babilonians (digging for mettals) chaunced to light vpon, and mistaking it for treasure, brake it ope verie greedily, when, as out of Pandoras Boxe of maladyes which Epime-theus opened, all manner of euills flew into the world; so all manner of deuills then broke loose amongst humane kinde. Therein her drowsie diuination not much deceiu'd her; for neuer wer Empedocles deuils so tost from the aire into the sea, & from the sea to the earth, and from the earth to the aire againe exhaled by the Sunne, or driu'n vp by the windes & tempests, as his discontented pouertie (more disquiet than the Irifh seas) hath driu'n him from one profession to another. Deuinitie (the Heauen of all Artes) for a while drew his thoughts vnto it, but shortly after the world, the flesh, and the diuell with-drewe him from that, and needes he would be of a more Gentleman-like luftie cut; whereupon hee fell to morrall Epiftling and Poetrie. He fell, I may well say, & made the price of wit and Poetrie fall with him, when hee first began to be a fripler or broker in that trade. Yea, from the aire he fell to the sea, (that my comparison may hold in euerie point) which is,
he would needs crosse the seas' to fetch home two penniworth of Tuscanisme: from the sea to the earth againe he was tost, videlicet shortly after hee became a rouguish Commenter vppon earth-quakes, as by the famous Epiftles (by his owne mouth onely made famous) may more largely appeare. Ultima linea rerum, his finall entrancing from the earth to the skies, was his key-colde defence of the Cleargie in the Tractate of Pap-hatchet, inter-mingled, like a small Fleece of gallies, in the huge Armada against me. The second dreame his mother had, was that she was deliverd of a caliuer or hand-gun, which in the discharging burst. I pray God (with all my heart) that this caliuer, or caualier, of Poetrie, this hand-gun, or elder-gun, that shoots nothing but pellets of chewd paper, in the discharging burst not. A third time in her sleep she apprehended and imagined, that out of her belly there grew a rare garden bed, ouer-run with garish weedes innumerable, which had onely one slip in it of herb of grace, not budding at the toppe neither, but, like the floure Narcissus, hauing floweres onely at the roote; whereby she augur'd and coniecur'd, how euer hee made some shew of grace in his youth, when he came to the top or height of his best proove, he would bee found a barrass flalk without frute. At the same time (ouer and aboue) shee thought that, in stead of a
TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

boye, (which she desired) she was deliuered and brought to bed of one of these kiistlell birds, called a wind-fucker. Whether it be verifiable, or onely probably furmised, I am vn certaine, but constantly vp and downe it is bruted, how he pift incke as foone as ever he was borne, and that the first cloute he fowld was a sheete of paper; whence some mad wits giu'n to descant, eu'n as *Herodotus* held that the *Aethiopians* seed of generation was as blacke as inke, fo haply they vn happely wold conclude, an *Incubus*, in the likenes of an inke-bottle, had carnall copulation with his mother, when hee was begotten. Should I reckon vp but one halfe of the miracles of his conception, that verie substantially haue been affirmed vnto me, one or other, like *Bodine*, wold start / vp and taxe mee for a miracle-monger, as hee taxt *Liuy*, saying that hee talkt of nothing else, saue how oxen spake, of the flames of fire that issu'd out of the *Scipioes* heads, of the Statues of the Gods that swet, how *Iupiter*, in the likenes of a childe or yong-man, appeared to *Hanniball*, and that an Infant of fix months olde proclaymed triumph vp and downe the streeetes. But let him that hath the poyson of a thousand *Gorgons*, or flinging Basiliskes, full cram'd in his inke-horne, tamper with mee, or taxe mee in the way of contradiction neuer so little, and he shall finde (if I
finde him not a toad, worthie for nought but to be ttampt vnder foote) that I will spit fire for fire, fight diuell fight dragon, as long as he will. No vulgar respects haue I, what Hoppenny Hoe & his fellow Hankin Booby thinke of mee, so thofe whom Arte hath adopted for the peculiar Plants of her Academie, and refined from the dull Northernly drosse of our Clyme, hold mee in anie tollerable account.

The woonders of my great Grand-father Harueys progeniture, were thofe.

In the verie moment of his birth, there was a calfe borne in the same Towne with a double tongue, and hauing eares farre longer than anie asse, and his feete turned backward, like certaine people of the Tartars, that neuerthelss are reason-able swift.

In the houre of his birth there was a moft darksome Eclipse, as though hel and heauen, about a confluntion of an eternall league, had met together.

Thofe that calculated his natuuitie faid, that Saturne and the Moone (either of which is the caufer of madnesse) were melancholy conioynd together (contrarie to all/courfe of Aftromemie) when into the world hee was produced. About his lips, euen as about Dions fhip, there fcocked a swarme of waspes, as foone as euer he was laid
in his cradle. Scarce nine yeres of age he attaind too, when, by engrossing al ballets that came to anie Market or Faire there-aboutts, he aspired to bee as desperate a ballet-maker as the best of them. The first frutes of his Poetrie beeing a pittifull Dittie in lamentation of the death of a Fellow, that at Queene Mariæ coronation, came downward, with his head on a rope, from the Spyre of Powles steeple, and brake his necke. Afterward he exercisef to write certaine graces in ryme dogrell, and versës vpon euerie Month, manie of which are yet extant in Primers and Almanackes. His father, with the extreame joy of his towardnesse, wept infinitely, and prophecide he was too forward witted to liue long. His Schoole-mafter neuer heard him peirse or confeter, but he cryde out, O acumen Carneadum! O decus addite diuis! and swore by Sufenbrotus and Taleus, that he would prooue another Philo Iudaæus for knowledge and deep judgment, who in Philosophie was preferd aboue Plato; and bee a more rare Exchequer of the Musës, than rich Gaza was for wealth; which tooke his name of Cambyfes, laying all his Treasure there, when hee went to make warre against Aegipt.

By this time imagin him rotten ripe for the Vniuersitie, and that hee carries the poake for a meffe of porrèdge in Christs Colledge: which I doo
not vpbraid him with, as anie disparagement at all, since it is a thing euerie one that is Scholler of the Houfe is ordinarily subiect vnto by turns, but onely I thruft it in for a Periphrasis / of his admiffion, or matriculation. I am sure you will bee glad to heare well of him, since hee is a youth of some hope, and you haue been partly acquainted with his bringing vp.

In sadnes I would be loath to discourage ye, but yet in truth (as truth is truth, and will out at one time or other, and shame the diuell) the coppie of his Tutors letter to his father I will fhew you, about his carriage and demeanour; and yet I will not positiuely affirme it his Tutors Letter neither, and yet you maye gather more than I am willing to vtter, and what you lift not beleue referre to after Ages, euен as Paulus Iouius did in his lying praiſes of the Houſe of Medices, or the importu- nate Dialogue twixt Charles the Fifth and him, of Expedire te oportet, & parare calamos: or his tem- peſtuous thunder-bolt Inuectiue againſt Selimus.

The Letter of Harveys Tutor to his Father, as touching his manners and behauior.

Emanuell.

Sir, Grace and peace vnto you premisèd. So it is, that your fonne, you haue committed to my charge,
is of a passing forward carriage, & profiteth very foundly.

Carnead. That is, beares himselfe very forward on his tip-toes (as he did euer) and profits or battles foundly, and is a youth of a good size.

Letter.
Great expectations we haue of him, that hee will proue an other Corax or Lacedemonian Ctesiphon for Rhethorique, who was banisht because he vaunted he could talke a whole day of anie thing.

Benti. I would our Gurmo Hidruntum, were like wife banisht with him; for he can hotch-potch whole Decades vp of nothing, and talks idlely all his life time.

Letter.
and not much inferiour to Demosthenes, Aeschines, Demades, or the melodious recording Muse of Italy, Cornelius Mufa, Bishop of Bitonto, or the yet liuing mellifluous Pancarola, who is saied to cast out spirites by his powerfull divine eloquence.

Carnead. The spirit of foolery out of this Archibald Rupenrope he shall neuer be able to caste, were the Nestar of his eloquence a thousand times more superabundant incessant sourding.

Letter.
When I record (as I doo often) the strange untraffiqu't phrases, by him now vented and unpackt, as of incen-
darie for fire, an illuminarie for a candle and lan-thorne, an indument for a cloake, an vnder foote abieect for a shooe or a boote; then I am readie (with Erasmus) to cry, Sanete Socrates; or (with Aristotle) Ens entium miserere mei! what an ingeny is heere? O his concept is most delicate, and that right well he apprehendeth, having alreadie proposed high matters for it to worke on. For stealing into his Study by chance the other day, there I found divers Epiftles and Orations, purpofely directed and prepared, as if he had been Secretarie to her Maieftie for the Latine tongue; or againft such a place should fall, he would be sure not to be unprouided: as also hee had furnijht himſelfe (as if he made no queſtion to be the Vniuersitie Orator) for all Congratulations, Funerall Elegiacall condolments of the death of such and such a Doctor in Cambridge; and which is more, of euery Privy Counſailour in England. You are no Scholler, & therefore little know what belongs to it, but if you heard him how sacredly hee ends euery Sentence with effe poſſe videatur, you would (like thoſe that arriue in the Phillipinas oppreſt with sweete odors) forget you are mortall, and imagine your ſelfe no where but in Paradice. Some there be (I am not ignorant) that upon his often bringing it in at the end of euery period, call him by no other name, but effe poſſe videatur: but they are ſuch as were neuer endenizond in so much arte, as Similiter Definens; and know not
the true use of Numerus Rhetoricus. So upon his first manumission in the mysterie of Logique, because he observed Ergo was the deadly clap of the piece, or driu'n home stab of the Syllogisme, hee accustomed to make it the Faburden to anie thing hee spake; As if anie of his companions complained hee was hungrie, hee would straights conclude Ergo, you must goe to dinner; or if the clocke had stroke or bell towld, Ergo you must goe to such a Lecture; or if anie stranger said he came to seeke such a one, and desir'd him he would shew him which was his chamber, he would forthwith come upon him with, Ergo he must goe up such a paire of staies: whereupon (for a great while) he was calld nothing but Gabriell Ergo, vp and downe the Colledge. But a scoffe which longer dwelt with him than the rest, though it argued his extreme pregnancie of capacitie, and argute transpersing dexteritie of Paradoxiisme; was that once he would needs defend a Rat to be Animal rationale, that is, to have as reasonable a soule as anie Academick, because she eate and gnawd his bookes, and, except she carried a braine with her, she could never digest or be so capable of learning. And the more to confirme it, because euerie one laught at him for a common Mountebanke Rat-catcher about it; the next rat he seized on hee made an Anatomie of, and read a lecture of 3. dayes long uppon euerie artire or muschle in her, and after hangd her ouer his head in his studie, in stead of an N. III. 7
Apothecaries Crocodile, or dride Alligatur. I haue not yet mentiond his Poetrie, wherein hee surmounteth and dismounteth the most heroycallest Countes Mountes of that Craft; hauing writ verfes in all kindes, as in forme of a paire of gloues, a dozen of points, a paire of spectacles, a two-hand sword, a poynado, a Coloffus, a Pyramide, a Painters eažili, a market crosse, a trumpet, an anchor, a paire of pot-hookes; yet I can see no Authors he hath, more than his owne naturall Genius or Minerua, except it bee Haue with ye to Florida, The fторie of Axeres and the worthie Iphijs, As I went to Walfingham, and In Creete when Dedalus, a song that is to him food from heauen, and more transporting and rauishing than Platoes Discourse of the immortalitie of the soule was to Cato, who, with the verie ioy he conceiud from reading thereof, wold needs let out his soule, and so stabd himselfe. Above Homers or all mens workes whosoever he doth prize it, laying it vnder his pillow. (like Homers works) euery night, and carrying it in his boſome (next his heart) euerie day. From the generall Discourse of his vertues, let mee digresse, and informe you of some few fragments of his vices; as like a Church and an ale-houſe, God and the diuell, they manie times dwell neere together. Memorandum: his laundreſſe complaines of him that hee is mightie flesby giuen, and that there had lewdnes passed betwixt her daughter and him,
if she had not luckily Prevented it by searching her daughters pocket, wherein she found a little epitomized Bradfords Meditations, no broader volum'd than a Seale at Armes, or a blacke melancholy veluet patch, and a three-pennie pamphlet of The Fall of man he had bestowed on her, that he might show her under hatches in his study, & do what he wold with her. In a waft white leaf of one of which booke, he had writ for his sentence, or posie, Nox & amor, as much to say as O for a pretie wench in the darke; and underneath, Non sunt fine viribus artus, If thou com'st, old lasse, I will tickle thee: and in the other, Leue fit quod bene fertur onus, that is, we must beare with one another, and Fœlices quibus vœus adeæft, use in all things makes perfect. Secondly, he is beyond all reason, or Gods forbod, distractedly enamourd of his own beautie, spending a whole forenoone euerie day in spunging and licking himselfe by the glasse; and euether euerie night after supper to walke on the market hill to shew himselfe, holding his gown up to his middle, that the wenches may see what a fine leg and a dainty foote he hath in pumpes and pantoffles, and if they giue him neuer so little an amorous regard, he presently boards them with a set speach of the first gathering together of societies, and the distinction of amor and amicitia out of Tullies Offices; which if it work no effect, & they laugh at, he
will rather take a raison of the sunne, and weare it at his eare for a favor, than it should bee said hee would goe away emptie. Thirdly, he is verie seditious and mutinous in conversacion, picking quarrells with euerie man that will not magnifie and applaud him, libelling most execrably and inhumanely on lacke of the Falcon, for that he would not lend him a messa of mustard to his red herrings; yea, for a lesser matter than that on the Colledge dog he libeld, onely because he proudly bare vp his taile as hee past by him. And fourthly and lastly, he useth often to be drunk with the sirruppe or broth of beud prunes, and eateth more bread under pretence of swearing by it, than would server a whole Band in the Low Countries. These are the least portion of his veniall sinnes, but I forbear him, & proceed no further, because I loue him: only I wold wish you (being his father) at anie hand to warne him of these matters privately betwixt him and you, and againe and againe cry out upon him to beware of pride; which I more than fatally prophecie will be his vitre ouerthrow.

Yours assuredly, and so forth,

Iohannes sine nomine; Anno Domini, what ye will.

Carnead. What is your censure, you that bee of
the common counsaile, may this Epistle passe or no without a demurre or prouiso?

Consl. Pass in the way of pastime, and so forth; it being no indecorum at all, to the Comedie we haue in hand, to admit Piers himselfe for his Tutor, for if he proceed in the feuere discipline he hath begun, he is like to humble him, and bring him to more goodnes than anie Tutor or Master he euer had since he was borne.

LIFE.

Leauing his childhood, which hath leaue or a lawe of priuileged to be fond ; & to come to the first prime of his pamphleting, which was much about the setting vp of the Bull by Felton on the bishop of Londons gate, or rather some prettie while before, when for an assay or nice tafting of his pen, he capitulated on the births of monsters, horrible murders, and great burnings ; and afterward, in the yeare when the earth-quake was, he fell to be a familiar Epiftler, & made Powles Church-yard / resound, or crie twang againe, with foure notable famous Letters: in one of which hee enterlaced his short but yet sharp iudiciall of Earthquakes, & came verie short and sharpe vpon my lord of Oxford in a rattling bundle of English Hexameters. How that thriu'd with him some honeft Chronicler helpe me to remember, for it is
not comprehended in my braines Diarie or Ephemerides: but this I can iustifie, that immediately vpon it he became a common writer of Almanackes. Tis meruaile if some of you, amongst your vn satiable ouerturnings of Libraries, haue not stumbled on such an approued architect of Calenders, as Gabriel Frend, the prognosticator. That Frend I not a little suspect (if a man should take occasion to trye his Frend) would be found to bee no Frend, but my constant approued mortall enemie Gabriell Haruey. Well, I may say to you, it is a difficult rare thing in these dayes to finde a true Frend. But the probable reasons which driue me to coiecure that it is a false Frend which deludes vs with these durtie astronomicall predictions, & that Gabriell Haruey is this Frend in a corner, which no man knowes of, be these that follow. First, he hath been noted, in manie companies where hee hath been, very suspiciously to undermine, whither any man knew such a fellow as Gabriell Frend, the Prognosticator or no? or whether they euer heard of anie that euer saw him or knew him? Wheretoo, when they all aunswered with one voyce, not guiltie to the seeing, hearing, or understanding, of anie such Starry Noune Substantie; vp starts me he (like a proud scholemaster, when one of his Boyes hath made an Oration before a countrey Maior that hath pleasd)
and bites the lip, and winkes / and smiles priuily, and lookes pertly vpon it, as who should say, \textit{coram quem queritis adsum}: and after some little coy bridling of the chin, and nice simpring and wrything his face 30. waies, tells them flatly that vpon his credit and knowledge (both which are hardly worth a candles end to helpe him to bed with) there is no such \textit{Quarter-maister}, or master of the 4. Quarters, or Writer in redde letters, as that supposed flower of \textit{Frend-ly curtesie, Gabriell Frend}, the Prognosticator; but, to vfe plaine dealing amongst frends, a frend of his it is he muft coceale, who thought good to shroud himselfe vnder that title. Now if ye will allow of my verdit in this behalfe, I hold \textit{vnusquisque proximus ipse fibi}, euery man is the best \textit{Frend} to himself, & that he himself & no other, is that \textit{Frend} of his he muft conceale. The 2. argument that confirmes me in this strong article of my creede, is, for none is priuy to a\textit{blank} maintenance he hath, & some maintenace of necessity he muft haue, or else how can he main-taine his peak in true christendome of rose-water euerie morning? By the ciuil law, peraduenture you will alleage, he fetches it in: nay, therein ye are deceiud, for he hath no law for that. I will not deny but his mother may haue su'd \textit{in forma pauperis}, but he neuer sollicited in form of papers in the Arches in his life. How then, doth he fetch
it aloft with his poetrie? *Dii faciant laudis summa
fit ista suae.* I pray God he never haue better
lands or liuing till he die. Shall I discharge my
conscience, being no more than (on my soule) is
most true? The Printers and Stationers use him
as he were the *Homer* of this age, for they say vnto
him, *Si nihil attuleris, ibis, Homere, foras, Haruey*
if ye bring no mony in your purse, ye get no
books printed here. Euen / for the printing of
this logger-head Legend of lyes, which now I am
wrapping vp hot spices in, hee ran in debt with
*Wolfe,* the Printer, 36. pound, & a blue coate which
he borrowed for his man, and yet *Wolfe* did not so
much as brushe it when hee lent it him, or press out
the print where the badge had been. The
Storie at large, a leaf or two hence, you shall heare.
The laft refuge and sanctuarie for his exhibition
(after his lands, law, & poetrie are confiscated) is
to presume he hath some priuy benefactors or
patrons that holde him vp by the chin. What hee
hath had of late, my intelligence failes me, but for
a number of yeares past, I dare confidently depose,
not a bit nor cue of anie benefactor or patron he
had, except the Butler or Manciple of *Trinitie
Hall* (which are both one) that trusted him for his
commons & fizing; so that when I haue toyled the
vtmost that I can to saue his credite and honestie,
the best wit-craft I can turn him too, to get three
pence a weeke, and keepe the paper foales and upper leather of his pantoffles together, is to write Prognostigations and Almanackes; and that alone hath beene, and muft bee, his beft Philosophers Stone till hys laft destiny.

I was sure, I was sure, at one time or other I should take him napping. O eternall ieft (for Gods fake helpe me to laugh). What a graue Doctor, a baie John Doleta, the Almanack-maker, Doctor Deufe-ace and Doctor Mery-man? Why from this day to proceed, Ile neuer goe into Powles Church-yard to enquire for anie of his workes, but (where euer I come) looke for them behinde the doore, or on the backe-side of a fcreene (where Almanackes are fet ufually); or at a Barbers or Chand/lers fhop neuer to misfe of them. A maker of Almanackes, quoth a, God forgiue me they are readier money than Ale and cakes, and are more familiar read than Tullies familiar Epiftles, or the Discourse of Debitor & Creditor, especially of those that ordinary write Letters, or haue often occasion to paye money. They are the verie Dialls of dayes, the Sunnes gheffes; and the Moones months-mind. Here in London streets, if a man haue busines to enquire for anie bodie, and he is not well acquainted with the place, he goes filthely halpering, and asking, cap in hand, from one fhop to another, where's fuch a house and fuch a figne?
But if we haue busines to speake with anie in the fkie, buy but one of Gabriell Frend or Gabriell Harveys Almanacks, and you shall carry the signe & house in your pockets, whether Jupiters house, Saturnes house, Mars hys house, Venus house, or anie hot-house or baudyhousfe of them all. To conclude, not the pooreft walking-mate, or thredbare cut-purse in a countrey, that can well be without them, be it but to know the Faires & Markets when they fall: & againft who dare I will vphold it, that theres no such necessarie Book of common places in the earth as it, as for example, From London to Yorke, from Yorke to Barwicke, and so backwardes. It is a strange thing I should be fo skilfull in Phisiognomie and neuer studied it. I alwaies faw in the Doctors countenaunce he greedily hunted after the high way to honour, and was a busie Chronicler of high wayes, he had fuch a number of vgly wrinckled high wayes in his vilage. But the time was, when he would not haue giuen his head for the washing, and would haue tooke foule scorne that the beft of them all shoulde haue out-fac'd / him. I haue a tale at my tungs end, if I can happen vpon it, of his hobby-horse-reuelling & dominering at Audley-end, when the Queene was there: to which place, Gabriell (to doo his countrey more worship & glory) came ruffling it out, huffty tuffty, in his suite of veluet.
There be the in Cambridge that had occasion to take note of it, for he stood noted or scoard for it in their bookes manie a faire day after: and if I take not my markes amisse, Rauen, the botcher by Pembrook-hal, (whether he be aliue or dead I know not) was as priuie to it euerie patch of it from top to toe, as hee that made it; and if euerie one would but mend one as often as hee hath mended that, the world would bee by 200 parts honefter than it is; yet be he of the mending hand neuer so, and Gabriell neuer able to make him amends, he may bleffe the memorie of that wardrope, for it will be a good while ere hee meete with the like customer as it was to him, at least 14. yere together, falling into his hands twice a yeare, as sure as a club, before euerly Batchelors and Masters Commensment, or if it were aboue, it was a generall Item to all the Vniuersitie, that the Doctor had some ierking Hexameters or other shortly after to passe the stampe, hee neuer in all his life (till lately he fel a wrangling with his sister in law) having any other busines at London. The rotten mould of that worme eaten relique (if hee were well searcht) he weares yet, meaning when he dies to hang it ouer his tombe for a monument: and in the meane time, though it is not his lucke to meete with euer a substantiall baudie cafe (or booke cafe) that carries rem in re, meate in the
mouth in it (A miserable, intollerable cafe, when a yong fellow & a yong wench cannot put / the cafe together, and doo with their owne what they lift, but they shalbe put to their booke to confesse, and be hideously perplexed) yet I say daily and hourly doth he deale vpon the cafe notwithstanding. You wil imagine it a fable percase which I shall tell you, but it is x times more unfallible than the newes of the Jewes rising vp in armes to take in the Land of promise, or the raining of corne this Summer at Wakefield. A Gentleman (long agoe) lent him an old velvet saddle, which when he had no use for, since no man else would trust him for a bridle, and that he was more accustomed to be ridden than to ride, what does me he, but deeming it a verie base thing for one of his standing in the University to be said to be yet dunsing in Sadolet, & with all, scorning his chamber shuld be employd as an oftry press to lay vp iades riding jackets and trusses in, presentely vntrusseth & pelts the out-side from the lining, and vnder benedicite here in priuate be it spoken, dealt verie cunningly and couertly in the case, for with it he made him a case or couer, for a dublet, which hath cased and couered his nakednes euer since, and to tell yee no lye, about two yeare and a halfe past, hee credited Newgate with the fame metamorphized costly vesti-ment. As good cheape as it was deliuered to mee
(at the second hand) you have it. *Nil habeo præter auditum*, I was not at the cutting it out, nor will I bind your consciences too strictly to embrace it for a truth, but if my judgment might stand for vp, it is rather likely to be true than false, since it vanish't invisible and was never heard of: and besides, I cannot devise how he should behave him to consome such an implement, if he confiscated it not to that use, neither lending it away nor selling it: nor how he should other wise thrust himself into such a moth-eaten weed, having neither money nor friends to procure it. Away, away, never. hauke nor pause vpon it, for without all par-anters it is so; and let them tattle and prate till their tongues ake, were there a thousand more of them, and they should set their wit to his, he would make them set besides the saddle, euens as he did the Gentleman. A man in hys case hath no other shift, or apparaile, which you will, but he must thus shift otherwhile for his living, especially living quiet as he dooth without anie Crosses (in his purse *subaudi*) and being free from all covetous incumbrances: yet in my shallow foolish conceipt, it were a great deale better for him if he were not free, but craft soundly, & committed prisoner to the Tower, where, perhaps once in his life, he might be brought to look vpon the Queens coin in the Mynt, & not thus be
alwaies abroad, and neuer within, like a begger. I must beg patience of you, thogh I haue been somwhat too tedious in brushing his velvet, but the Court is not yet remou'd from Audley-end, and we shall come time enough thether to learne what rule he keepes.

There did this our Talatamtana, or Doctour Hum, thrust himselfe into the thickest rankes of the Noblemen and Gallants, and whatsoeuer they were arguing of, he would not misse to catch hold of, or strike in at the one end, and take the theame out of their mouths, or it should goe hard. In selfe same order was hee at his pretie toyes and amorous glaunces and purposes with the Damfells, & putting baudy riddles vnto them. In fine, some Disputations there were, and he made an Oration before the Maids of Honour, and not before her / Maiestie, as heretofore I misinformedly set down, beginning thus:

Nux mulier asinus simili sunt lege ligata,
Hac tria nill rectè faciunt, si verbera defunt.

A nut, a woman, and an ass are like,
These three doo nothing right, except you strike.

Carnead. He would haue had the Maids of Honor thriftely cudgeld beike, and lambeakt one after another.
Respond. They understood it not so.

Bentiv. No, I think so, for they understood it not at all.

Confil. Or if they had, they would have driven him to his guard.

Carnead. Or had the Guard driven him downe the staies, with Deiu vous garde Monsieur, goe and prate in the yard Don Pedant, there is no place for you here.

Life.

The proces of that Oration was of the same woofe and thrid with the beginning: demurely and maidenly scoffing, and blushingly wantoning, & making love to those soft skind soules & sweete Nymphes of Helicon, betwixt a kinde of carelesse rude ruffianisme, and curious finicall complement: both which hee more expressd by his countenance, than anie good iefts that hee uttered. This finished (though not for the finishing or pronouncing of this) by some better frends than hee was worthie of, and that afterwards found him vnworthie of the graces they had bestowed vpon him, he was brought to kisse the Queens hand, and it pleased her Highnes to say (as in my former Booke I haue cyted), that he lookt somthing like an Italian. No other incitement he needed to rouze his plumes, pricke up his eares, and run
away with the bridle betwixt his teeth, and take it upon him (of his owne originall ingrafted disposition thereto too he wanting no aptnes) but now he was an insulting Monarch, aboue Monarcha the Italian, that ware crownes on his shoos: and quite renounft his naturall English accents and gestures, & wrested himselfe wholly to the Italian puntillos, speaking our homely Iland tongue strangely, as if he were but a raw practioner in it, and but ten daies before had entertained a schoole-master to teache him to pronounce it. Ceremonies of reuerence to the greatest States (as it were not the fashion of his countray) he was very parsimonious and niggardly of, and would make no bones to take the wall of Sir Philip Sidney, and another honourable Knight (his companion), about Court yet attending; to whom I wish no better fortune, than the forelockes of Fortune he had hold of in his youth, & no higher fame than hee hath purchaft himselfe by his pen: being the first (in our language) I haue encountred, that repurified Poetrie from Arts pedantisme, & that instructed it to speake courtly. Our Patron, our Phæbus, our first Orpheus or quintessence of inuention he is: wherefore, either let vs jointly inuent some worthy subieckt to eternize him; or let Warre call back Barbarifme from the Danes, Piëes, and Saxons, to suppres our frolicke spirits, and the leaft sparke of
more elevated fence amongst us finally be quenched and die, ere we can set vp brazen Pillers for our Names and Sciences, to preferue them from the Deluge of Ignorance. But to returne from whence I haue strayd, Dagobert Coppenhagen in his iollitie perfifteth; is Haile fellow well met with those that looke higheft: and to cut it off in three syllables, follows the traine of the delicatest favorites and minions, which by chaunce being withdrawne a mile or two off, to one Master Bradburies, where the late deceased countesse of Darbie was then harbininged, after supper they fell to dancing, every one choosing his mate as the custome is: in a trice so they shuffled the cards of purpofe (as it wer to plague him for his presumption) that will he nil, he must tread the measures about with the fouleft vgly gentlewoman or fury that might be, (then wayting on the foresaid Countesse) thrice more deformed than the woman with the horne in her head. A turne or two hee mincingly pac't with her about the roome, & solemnly kift her at the parting: Since which kiffe of that squinteyd Lamia or Gorgon, as if she had been another Circe to transforme him, he hath not one houre beeene his owne man. For whilst yet his lips smoakt with the steame of her scorching breath, that parcht his beard like sunburnt graffe in the Dog-daies, he ran headlong violently to his study as if he had bin
borne with a whirl-winde, and strait knockt me up together a Poem, calde his Aedes Valdinenses, in prayse of my L. of Leycest, of his kisst the Queens hand, and of her speech & comparison of him, how he lookt like an Italian: what vide, sayth he in one place; Did I see her Maiest, quoth a, Imo, vide ipse loquentem cum Snaggo, I saw her conferring with no worse man then Master Snagge. The bunterliest vearses they were that ever were scande, beeing moft of them hought, and cut off by the knees, out of Virgill and other Authors. This is a patterne of one of them: Wodde, mensque tusque tusque Britannorumque suorumque, running through all the Pronounes / in it, and iumpe imitating a verse in As in presenti, or in the demeanes or adiacents I am certaine. I had forgot to obserue vnto you, out of his first foure familiar Epiftles, his ambusious stratagem to aspire, that whereas two great Pieres beeing at iarre, and their quarrell continued to bloudfhed, he would needs, vncauld and when it lay not in his way, steppe in on the one side, which indeede was the safer side (as the foole is crafty inough to sleepe in a whole skin) and hewe and slash with his Hexameters, but hewd and slasht he had beene as small as chippings, if he had not played ducke Fryer, and hid himselfe eight weeks in that Noblemans house, for whome with his pen hee thus bladed. Yet neuerthelesse Syr
Iames a Croft, the olde Controwler, ferrited him out, and had him vnder hold in the Fleete a great while, taking that to be aimde and leveld against him, because he cald him his olde Controwler, which he had most venomously belched against Doctour Perne. Vpon his humble submission, and ample exposition of the ambiguous Text, and that [at] his forementioned Mecenas mediation, matters were dispens'd with and qualified, & some light countenance, like sunshine after a storme, it pleased him after this to let fall vpon him, and so dispatcht him to spurre Cut backe againe to Cambridge. Where, after his arrial, to his associates and companions he priuatly vaunted what redoubled rich brightnes to his name this short eclipse had brought, and that it had more dignified and rais'd him, than all his endeuours from his childhood. With such incredible applause and amazement of his Judges hee bragd hee had cleard himselfe, that euery one that was there ran to him and embraught him, and shortly hee was promised to be cald to high preferment in court, not an ace lower than a Secretariship, or one of the Clarks of the Counsell. Should I expaline to you howe this wrought with him, and howe in the itching heate of this hopefull golden worlde and hony moone, the ground would no longer beare him, but to Sturbridge Fayre, and vp and downe Cambridge, on his foot-cloth maieffi-
cally he would pace it, with manie moe madde
trickes of youth nere plaid before; in stead of
making his heart ake with vexing, I should make
yours burst with laughing. Doctor Perne in this
plight, nor at anie other time, euer met him, but he
would shake his hand and crie Vanitas vanitatum,
omnia vanitas, Vanitie of vanities, and all things is
vanitie.

His father he vndid to furnifh him to the Court
once more, where presenting himselfe in all the
colours of the raine-bow, and a paire of mouftachies
like a black horse tayne tyde up in a knot, with
two tuffts flicking out on each side, he was askt by
no meane personage, Unde haec insan ia? whence
proceedeth this folly or madness? & he replied
with that wether-beaten piece of a verse out of
the Grammer, Semel insan iuimus omnes, once in our
dayes there is none of vs but have plaid the ideots;
and so was he counted and bad stand by for a
Nodgcombe. He that most patronizd him, prying
more searchingly into him, and finding that he was
more meete to make sport with, than anie way
deeply to be employd, with faire words shooke
him of, & told him he was fitter for the Vniuer-
sitie, thā for the Court or his turne, and so bad
God prosper his studiies, and sent for another
Secretarie to Oxford.

Readers, be merry; for in me there shall want
nothing / I can doo to make you merry. You see I haue brought the Doctor out of request at Court, & it shall cost me a fall, but I will get him howted out of the Vniuersitie too, ere I giue him ouer. What will you giue mee when I bring him vppon the Stage in one of the principallest Colledges in Cambridge? Lay anie wager with me, and I will; or if you laye no wager at all, Ile fetch him aloft in Pedantius, that exquisit Comedie in Trinitie Colledge; where vnder the cheife part, from which it tooke his name, as namely the concise and firking finicaldo fine School-master, hee was full drawen & delineated from the soale of the foote to the crowne of his head. The iuist manner of his phrase in his Orations and Disputations they stufft his mouth with, & no Buffianisme throughout his whole bookes, but they bolsterd out his part with; as those ragged remnaunts in his foure familiar Epiftles twixt him and Senior Immerito, raptim scripta, Nofti manum & stylum, with innumerable other of his rabble-routs: and scoffing his Musarum Lachrymae with Flebo amorem meum, etiam Musarum lachrymis; which, to giue it his due, was a more collacehrymate wretched Treatife than my Piers Pennileffe, being the pittifullest pangs that euer anie mans Muse breathd foorth. I leaue out halfe; not the carrying vp of his gowne, his nice gate on his pantoffles, or the affected
accent of his speach, but they personated. And if I should reveale all, I thinke they borrowd his gowne to playe the Part in, the more to flout him. Let him denie this (and not damne himselfe) for his life if hee can. Let him denie that there was a Shewe made at Clare-hall of him and his two Brothers, called,

\[ Tarra / rantantara turba tumultuosa Trigonum, \\
Tri-Harueyorum, Tri-harmonia. \]

Let him denie that there was another Shewe made of the little Minnow his Brother, Dodrans Dicke, at Peter-house, called,

\[ Duns furens. Dick Haruey in a frensie. \]

Whereupon Dick came and broke the Colledge glasse windowes; and Doctor Perne (being then either for himselfe or deputie Vice-chancellour) caused him to be fetcht in, and set in the Stockes till the Shew was ended, and a great part of the night after.

The first motiue, or caller foorth, of Gabriels English Hexameters, was his falling in loue with Kate Cotton, and Widdowes his wife, the Butler of Saint Johns. And this was a rule inuiolate amongst the fraternitie of them, Gabriell was alwayes in loue, Dick still in hate, either with Aristotle, or with the great Beare in the firmament which he continually bayted; or with Religion, against which
in the publique Schooles he set vp Atheistical Questions, and besides compared his beard so Porphirian blasphemously; as I am afraid the Earth would swallow me, if I should but rehearse. It fell to my lot to have the perusing of a letter of his to Doctor Fulke, then lying at a Preachers house neere Criplegate, in London, as touching his whole persecution by the Fellowes of the House about it, & how, except he had mercie on him, he were expulft and caft awaye without redemption.

The third Brother (John), had almost as ill a name as the Spittle in Shorditch, for the olde reakes hee kept with the wenches in Queens Colledge Lane; and if M. Wathe his ancient ouer-wharter (betwixt whom & him there was such deadly emulation) had bin furnisht with those instructions thereof which I could haue lent him, he had put him downe more handsomely than he did, though at a Commensment dinner in Queens Colledge (as apparantly as might be) he graueld, and set a ground both him and his brother Gabienus. This John was hee, that being entertaind in Justice Meades House (as a Schoole-master) stole away his daughter, and to pacifie him, dedicated to him an Almanacke; which daughter (or Johns wife) since his death, Gabriell (vnder pretence of taking out an Administration,
according as she in every court exclaimes) hath gone about to circumvent of all she hath: to the which effect (about 3 yere agoe) there were three Declarations put vp against him, & a little while after I heard there were Attachments out for him: whether he hath compounded since or no, I leave to the Iurie to enquire.

Pigmey Dicke aforesaid, that lookes like a pound of gold-smiths candles, is such another Venerian steale placard as John was, being like to commit folly the laft yeare in the House where he kept (as a frend of his verie soberly informed me) with a Milke-maid; & if there had not bin more gouernment in her than in him (for all his diuinitifhip) the thing you wote of, the blowe that neuer smarteth had been stroke, and she carried away to Saffron-walden, he sending for her to one Philips his house, at the signe of the Bell in Bromley, & there feasting her to that end. Fast and pray, luxurious Vicar, to keepe vnder thy vnruuly members, and wrap thee in a Monkes Cowle, which (they say) is good to mortifie; or drinke of the water of Saint Iues, by John Bale (out of Romish Authors) produced to be good against the temptations of the petticoate; or (which exceedeth them both) trie Master Candishes Roote hee brought out of the Indies, giu'n him by a venerable Hermit, with this probatum est,
or vertue, that he which tafted it should neuer luft after; by that token he could meet with none about Court, or in London, that was content to be an Eunuch for the Kingdome of Heauen, or lou'd his pleafure fo little, as to venture upon it. I haue not yet feald and fhakt hands with him for making two fuch fale Prophets of Saturne & Jupiter, out of whose iumbling in the darke, and coniunction copulatijue, he denounced fuch Oracles and alterations to enflue, as if (like another Thebit Bencorat) he had liu'd 40. yere in a mountain to discerne the motion of the eighth Orbe: but as he (for all his labour) could not attaine to it, no more could Dick (with his prefiections) compaffe anie thing but derifion, being publiquely preacht againft for it at Powles Croffe by the Bishop of London that then was, who (according to Arte, if fuch a Coniunction had chanc'd) disproou'd the reuolutions to bee cleane contrarie; and besides, a fingular Scholler, one Master Heath, (a Follower of the right Honorable and worthie Lord of Hunsdon that now is) fet vpon it, and anfwered it in Print, pell mell, cape a pee, by probable reafon, and out of all Authors perficuously demonstrating what a lying Ribaden, and Chinklen Kraga it was, to constellate and plannet it fo portentoufly. I am none of the Cashiers, or Prouditori, for lame fouldiours or Men of defert,
but were I one, as the Athenians (in the noblest Schoole of their Academy) erected to BeroJuSy, the Aftro / loger, a Statue with a golden tongue, for his predictions were true: so wold I largely disburfe toward the building him a Statue on Sophisters Hills, by Cambridge, with a tongue of copper or ockamie (neerely counterfetting filuer) such as organe pipes & fericants maces are made of, because his predictions are false & errorious. And so lightly are all the trade of them, neuer foretokening or foretelling anie thing, till after it be come to passe: and then, if it be a Warrior, or Conqueror, they would flatter, who is luckie and succesfull in his enterprifes, they say he is borne vnder the auspicious Signe of Capricorne, as Cardan faith Cosmo de Medices, Selimus, Charles the fifth, and Charles Duke of Burbon were; albeit, I dare be sworne, no wizardly Astronomer of them all euer dreamd of anie such Calculations, till they had shewed themselfes so victorious, and their prosperous raignes were quite expired. On the other side, if he be disastrous or retrograde in hys courses, the malevolent starres of Medusa and Andromeda, inferring suddaine death or banishment, predominated his natiiutie. But (I thank heauen) I am none of their credulous disciples, nor can they coufen or seduce me with anie of their iugling coniecturalls, or winking, or tooting through a fix
penny *Jacobs Staffe*; their spells, their characters, their anagrams, I have no more persuasion of, than I am persuaded, that under the inverted denomination or anagram of this Word *September*, (as some of our late Deuines and auncient Hebrue Rabbines would enforce upon vs) is included the certaine time of the Worlds first Creation; or that he which is born under *Aries* shall never goe in a thrid bare cloake, or be troubled with the rheume, because the / Sunne, arriving in that Poynt, cloatheth the Earth with a new fleece, and suckes vp all the Winters superfluous moyfture; or that he which is borne vnder *Libra* shall bee a Judge or Iustice of Peace, because the Sunne in that Signe equally poyzeth the daies & nights alike. *Heilding Dicke* (this our Ages *Albumazar*) is a temporift that hath faith inough for all Religions, euens as *Thomas Deloney*, the balletting Silke-weauer, hath rime inough for all myracles, & wit to make a *Garland of goodwill* more than the premisses, with an Epistle of *Momus* and *Zoylus*; whereas his Muse, from the first peeping foorth, hath stood at Liuery at an Ale-house wifpe, never exceeding a penny a quart, day nor night; and this deare yeare, together with the silencing of his loombes, scarce that; he being strained to betake him to carded Ale: whence it proceedeth that since *Candlemas* or his Iigge of *John for the King*, not one merrie
Dittie will come from him, but *The Thunder-bolt against Swearers, Repent England, repent, & The strange judgments of God.* No more will there from *Dick quibus in terris, Dick, pastor of Chefelhurst,* that was wont to pen Gods judgements upon such and such and one, as thicke as Watermen at Westminster-bridge. The miracles of the burning of *Brustur* with his Wench in adulterie, he writ for *Binneman*; which a villaine (*Brusturs owne kinsman*) long afterward at the Gallowes tooke upon him, and shewed what Ninnies a vayne Pamphleter (one *Richard Harvey*) had made of the world, imputing it to such a wonderfull vengeance of adulterie, when it was nought but his murdrous knauerie. Dead sure they are in writing against the dead; dauncing Moriscoes and Lualtoes on the filent graues of *Plato, Buchanan, Sinesius, Pierius, Aristotle, & the whole Petigree of the Peripatecians, Sophifters, & Sorbonists*; the most of whose mouthes, clods had bungd vp many *Olimpiades* since, yet seeke they to stifle and choak them again with waffe paper: when (in thys innouating selfe-love Age) it is disputable, whether they haue anie frends or no left to defend them. This is that *Dick,* that set *Aristotle,* with his heelles vpward, on the Schoole gates at *Cambridge,* and affes eares on hys head; a thing, that in *perpetuam rei memoriam,* I will record and neuer haue done with. This is
that Dick, that comming to take one Smiths (a yong Batchelour of Trinitie Colledge) Questions, and they being such as he durft not venture on, cride, Aquila non capit muscas, an eagle catcheth no flies; and so gaue them him againe: whereto, the other (beeing a luftie big boand fellow, & a Golias, or Behemoth, in comparison of him) ftrait retorted it vpon him, Nec elephas mures, no more doth an elephant ftoope to myce; and so they parted. This is that Dick, of whom Kit Marloe was wont to fay, that he was an affe, good for nothing but to preach of the Iron Age: dialoguizing Dicke, Io Paean Dicke, Synesian and Pierian Dick, Dick the true Brute, or noble Trojan, or Dick that hath vowd to liue and die in defence of Brute, and this our Iles first offpring from the Troians, Dick against baldnes, Dick against Buchanan, little and little witted Dicke, Aquinas Dicke, "Lipsian" Dick, heigh light a loue a Dick, that loft his Benefice & his Wench both at once; his Benefice for want of sufficiencie, and his wench for want of a Benefice or suf/ficient liuing to maintaine her, Dilemma Dick, disfentious Dick; with abi in malam crucem, that is, get all thy frends in their prayers to commend thee, I shut vp the congested Index of thy redundant opproby, and haft backe to the right
worshipfull of the Lawes, Master D. Garropius, thy brother, (as in euerie Letter that thou writ’st to him thou tearmst him,) who, for all he is a ciuill Lawier, will neuer be Lex loquens, a Lawier that shall lowd throate it with, Good, my Lord, consider this poor mans case. But thogh he be in none of your Courts Licentiate, and a Courtier otherwise, hee is neuer like to be; one of the Emperorour Justinians Courtiers (the ciuill Lawes chiefe Founder) malgre he will name himselfe: and a quarter of a yeare since, I was aduertisefed, that aswell his workes, as the whole body of that Law compleat, (hauing no other employment in his Facultie) hee was in hand to tourne into English Hexameters; and if he might haue had his will, whiles he was yet resident in Cambridge, it should haue been seuerely enacted throughout the Vniuersitie, that none should speake or ordinarily conuerse, but in that cue. For himselfe, hee verie religiously obseru’d it, neuer meeting anie Doctor or frend of his, but he would salute him, or giue him the time of the day in it most heroically, euen as hee saluted a Phisition of speciall account in these tearmes.

Nere can I meet you, sir, but needs must I veile my bonnetto.

Which he (loth to be behinde with him in curtesie) thus turnd vpon him againe,
TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

Nere can I meet you, sir, but needs must I call ye knauetto.

Once hee had made an Hexameter verse of seauen feete, whereas it would lawfully beare but fixe; which fault / a pleasant Gentleman hauing found him with, wrapt the said verse in a piece of paper, & sent a lowfe with it, inserting vnderneath, *This verse hath more feet than a lowse*. But to so Dictionarie a custome it was grown with him, that after supper if he chaunst to play at Cards, and had but one Queen of Harts light in his hand, he would *extempore*, in that kinde of verse, runne vpon mens hearts and womens hearts all the night long, as,

*Stout heart and sweet hart, yet stoutest hart to bee stooped.*

No may-pole in the streeete, no wether-cocke on anie Church steeple, no garden, no arbour, no lawrell, no ewe tree, that he would ouerslip without haylsing after the same methode. His braynes, his time, all hys maintenance & exhibition vpon it he hath consumed, and neuer intermitted, till such time as he beganne to Epistle it against mee, since which I haue kept him a work indifferently: and that in the deadest seafon that might bee; hee lying in the ragingest furie of the last Plague, when there dyde aboue 1600. a week in *London,*
inck-squittring and printing against me at Wolfes in Powles Church-yard. Three quarters of a yere thus cloystred and immured hee remained, not beeing able almost to step out of dores, he was so barricadoed vp with graues, which besedged and undermined his verie threshold; nor to open his window euening or morning, but a dampe (like the smoake of a Cannon) from the fat manured earth with contagion (being the buriall place of five parishes) in thick rouling cloudts would struggingly funnell vp, & with a full blast puffe in at his casements. Supply mee with a margent note, some bodie that hath more idle leasure than I haue at the /poft haft hudling vp of these presents, as touching his spirites yearning empassionment, and agonizd fiery thirst of reuenge, that neglected soule & bodies helth, to compasse it: the helth of his bodie, in lying in the hell mouth of infection, & his soules health in minding any other matters than his soul; nay, matters that were vttter enemies to his soul (as his first offeringe of wrong, & then prosecuting of it), when his soule and bodie both, euerie hower wer at the hazard poyn to be seperated. The argument (to my great rejoycing & solace) frō hence I haue gathered, was, that my lines were of more smarting efficacie than I thought, & had that steele and mettall in them, which pierst & stung him to
the quick, and droue him, vpon the first searching
of the wounds I had giu'n him, to such rauing
impatience, as he could rest no where, but through
the poysonfullest iawes of death, and fire and
water, he would burst, to take vengeance, and
not onely on the liuing but the dead also, (as
what will not a dogge doo that is angerd, bite
and gnarle at anie bone or stone: that is neere
him): but rather I deeme that from the harfth
grating in his eares, & continuall crashing of
sex tens spades against dead mens bones (more
dismall musique to him than the Voyce or Ghofts
Hearfe), he came so to be incenst & to inueigh
against the dead, therewith they exasperating, and
setting his teeth on edge, more than hee would
But let that rest, which would not let him rest:
at Wolfes he is billeted, sweating, and dealing
vpon it moft intentiuely; and for he would (as
nere as was possible) remoue all whatsoever en-
cumbraces, that might alienate, or withdraw him
from his studie, hee hath vowed (during his abode
there) not to haue a denier in his purfe, or see
money, / but let it run on the score, and goe to
the diuell if it will, he is resolute, and means to
double himselfe with none of this trash: and yet
it is a world to heare how malicious tongues will
flaund a man with truth, and giue out, how of
one Mighell, (somtimes Dexters man in Powles
N. III. 9
Churchyard, though now he dwells at Exeter) he should borrow ten shillings to buy him shoes and stockings, and when it came to repayment, or that he was faine to borrow of another to satisifie and pay him (as he will borrow so much favor of him he nere saw before) no lesse than halfe a crowne out of that ten shillings he forfware, & rebated him for vfurie. Contet your self, it was a hard time with him, let not Mighel and Gabriell (two Angels) fall out for a trifle: those that be his frends will consider of it & beare with him, euen as Beniamin, the Founders father who dwels by Fleet-bridge, hath borne with him this foure yere for a great which he owes him for plaisters; and so Trinitie Hall hath borne with him more than that, he being (as one that was Fellow of the same House of his standing informd mee) neuer able to pay his Commons, but from time to time borne out in almes amongst the rest of the Fellowes; how euer he tells some of his frends he hath an out-brothership, or beadsmans stipend, of ten shillings a yeare there still comming to him, and a Library worth 200. pound. John Wolfe sayes nothing, and yet hee beares with him asmuch as the best, and if hee had borne a little longer, he would haue borne till his back broke, though Gabriell lookes big vpon it, and protefts by no
TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

bugges, he owes him not a dandiprat, but that Wolfe is rather in his debt than hee in his, all reckonings juftly caft. In plaine truth and in verity, some pleasures / he did Wolfe in my knowledge. For first and formost he did for him that eloquent postcript for the Plague Bills, where he talkes of the series, the classes & the premisses, & presenting them with an exacter methode hereafter, if it please God the Plague continue. By the ftyle I tooke it napping, and smelt it to be a pig of his Sus Minerum, the Sow his Mufe, as soone as euer I read it, and since the Printer hath confefed it to mee. The vermilion Wrinckle de crinkledum hop’d (belike) that the Plague would proceed, that he might haue an occupation of it. The second thing wherein he made Wolfe so much beholding to him, was that if there were euer a paltrie Scriuano, betwixt a Lawiers Clark & a Poet, or smattring pert Boy whose buttocks were not yet coole since he came from the gramer, or one that houers betwixt two crutches of a Scholler and a Traueller, when neither will helpe him to goe vpright in the worlds opinion, & shuld stumble in there with a Pamphlet to fell, let him or anie of them but haue conioynd with him in rayling againft mee, and feed his humor of vaine-glorie, were their stuffe by ten millions more Tramontani or Transalpine barbarous
than balletry, he would haue preft it vpon Wolfe, whether he would or no, and giu'n it immortall allowance aboue Spencer. So did he by that Philiftine Poem of Parthenophill and Parthenope, which to compare worfe than it selfe, it would plunge all the wits of France, Spaine, or Italy. And when hee saw it would not fell, hee cald all the World affes a hundred times ouer, with the stampingeest cursing and tearing he could vtter it, for that he hauing giu'n it his passe or good word, they obstinately contemnd and mislik'd it. So did he by Chutes Shores Wife, / and his Procris and Cephalus, and a number of Pamphlagonian things more, that it would ruft & yron spot paper to haue but one fillable of their names breathed ouer it. By these complots and carefull puruey-ance for him, Wolfe could not choose but bee a huge gainer, a hundred marke at leaft, ouer the shoulder: & which was a third aduantage to hoyft or raife him, besides the Doctors meate and drinke, which God payd for, and it is not to be spoken of, he set him on the score for fack centum pro cento, a hundred "quarts in a seven-night," whiles he was thus faracenly sentencing it against mee. Towards the latter end, he grew weary of keeping him and so manie affes (of his procuring) at liucry, and would grumble and
mutiny in his hearing of want of money. Tut
man, mony would he say, is that your discon-
tent? Plucke vp your spirites and bee merry,
I cannot abide to heare anie man complaine for
want of money. Twice or thrice hee had set
this magnificent face vpon it, and euer Wolfe
lookd when hee would haue terrifide the table
with a found knock of a purffe of angels, and
sayd, There’s for thee, paye mee when thou art
able: but with him there was no such matter,
for he put his hand in his pocket but to scrub
his arme a little that itcht, and not to pluck out
anie cash, which with him is a stranger shape
than euer Cacus shrowded in his den, and would
make him, if he shoule chop on anie such churlifh
lumpe vnawares, to admire & bleffe himselfe,
with

Quis nouus his nostris succeßit sedibus hospes.

Iefu how comes this to passe? heere is such geere
as I neuer saw? So bleffe himselfe he could not,
but beeing a little more roundly put to it, he
was faine to confesse, that / he was a poore
impecunious creature, & had not traffiquat a great
while for anie of these commodities of Santa Cruz,
but as soone as euer his rents came vp, which he
expected euerie howre (though I could neuer
heare of anie he had, more than his ten shillings
a yeare at *Trinitie Hall*, if he haue that) he would moft munificently congratulate, correspond, and sympathize with him in all interchangable vicissitude of kindnes; & let not the current of time feeme too protraçtiue, extended, or breed anie disunion betwixt them, for he would accelerate & feftinate his procrastinating ministers and commiffaries in the countrey, by Letters as expedite as could bee. I giue him his true dialect and right varnish of elocution, not varying one I tittle from the high straine of his harmonious phrafe, wherein he puts downe *Hermogenes* with his Art of Rhetorique, and so farre outstrips ouer-tunged Beldam *Roome*, or her super-delicate baftard daughter ceremonious dissembling *Italy*, as *Europe* puts down all the other parts of the *World* in populous societies and fertilenes. A Gentleman, a frend of mine, that was no straunger to fuch bandyings as had past, bewiixt vs, was defirous to see how he lookt since my strapadoing and torturing him; in which spleene he went and enquird for him: answere was made he was but new rifen, and if it wold please him to stay, he would come down to him anon. Two howres good by the clocke he attended his pleasure, while he (as some of his fellow-Inmates haue since related vnto mee) stood acting by the glasse, all his gestures he was to vse all the day
after, and currying & smudging and pranking himselfe vnmeasurably. Post varios casus, his case of tooth-pikes, his combe case, his case / of head-brushes and beard-brushes run ouer, & tot discrimina rerum, rubbing cloathes of all kindes, downe he came, and after the hazelos manus, with amplifications and complements hee be-laboured him till his eares tingled, and his feet ak'd againe. Neuer was man so surfeited and ouer-gorged with English, as hee cloyd him with his generous spirites, renumeration of gratuities, stopping the posternes of ingratitude, bearing the launcier too seuerre into his imperfections, and trauersing the ample forrest of interlocution. The Gentleman swore to mee, that vpon his first apparition (till he disclosed himselfe) he tooke him for an Vesher of a dancing Schoole, neither doth he greatly differ from it, for no Vesher of a dauncing Schoole was euere such a Baffia Dona or Baffia de umbra de umbra des los pedes, a kisser of the shaduw of your feetes shadew, as he is. I haue perused vearse of his, written vnder his owne hand to Sir Philip Sidney, wherein he courted him as he were another Cyparissus or Ganimede; the last Gordian true loues knot, or knitting vp of them is this:

*Sum iecur ex quo te primùm Sydnee vidi,*

*Os oculófsque regit, cogit amare iecur.*
All liuer am I, Sidney, since I saw thee;
My mouth eyes rules it, and to loue doth draw mee.

Not halfe a yeare since, comming out of Lincoln-shyre, it was my hap to take Cambridge in my waye, where I had not beene in fixe yeare before, when by wonderfull destenie, who (in the same Inne and very next chamber to mee, parted but by a wainscot doore that was naild vp, either vnwitting of other) should be lodged but his Gabrielship, that, in a manner, had liu'd as long a Pilgrim from thence as I. Euerie circumstance I cannot stand to / reckon vp, as how wee came to take knowledge of one anothers being there, or what a stomacke I had to haue sratcht with him, but that the nature of the place hinderd mee, where it is as ill as pettie treason, to look but awry on the sacred person of a Doctor, and I had plotted my reuenge otherwise ; as also of a meeting, or conference, on his part defired, wherein all quarrells might be disctuft and drawne to an attonement, but non vult fac, I had no fancie to it : for once before I had bin so coufend by his colloging, though personally we neuer met face to face, yet by trouch-men and vant-curriers betwixt vs, nor could it settle in my conscience, to loose so much paines I had tooke in new arraying & furbushing him, or that a publique
wrong in Print was to be so fleightly flubberd ouer in priuate, with Come, come, giue me your hand, let vs bee frends, and therevpon I drinke to you. And a further doubt there was if I had tafted of his beife and porridge at *Trinity Hal* as he desired, (*notandum est*, for the whole fortnight together that he was in *Cambridge*, his Commons ran in the Colledge detriments, as the greatest curtesie hee could doo the House, whereof he was, to eate vp their meate and neuer pay anie thing); If I had (I say) ruftt in my felfe, and two or three hungrie Fellowes more, and cryde, Doo you want anie guesstes? what, nothing but bare Commons; it had beene a qustion (considering the good-will that is betwixt vs) whether he wold haue lent me a precious dram more than ordinarie, to helpe disgeftion: he may be fuch another craftie mortring Druggeir, or Italian porridge seafoner, for anie thing I euer saw in his complexion. That word complexion is dropt foorth in good time, for to decrire to you /his complexion & composition, entred I into this tale by the way, or tale I found in my way riding vp to *London*. It is of an adult, swarth, chollericke dye, like restie bacon, or a dride scate-fish; fo leane and fo meagre, that you wold thinke (like the Turks) he obseru’d 4 Lents in a yere, or take him for the Gentlemans man
in the Courtier, who was so thin cheekd and gaunt and staru'd, that as he was blowing the fire with his mouth, the smoke tooke him vp, like a light strawe, and carried him to the top or funnell of the chimney, wher he had flowne out God knowes whether, if there had not bin crosse barres ouerwhart that stayde him; his skin riddled and crumpled like a peice of burnt parchment; & more channels and creases he hath in his face, than there be Fairie circles on Salisburie Plaine, and wrinkles & frets of old age, than charactrs on Christs Sepulcher in Mount Caluarie, on which euerie one that comes scrapes his name, and sets his marke, to shewe that hee hath been there: so that whosoeuer shall behold him,

\textit{Effe putet Boreae tri[ste furentis opus,}}

will sweare on a booke I haue brought him lowe, and throwdly broken him: which more to conforme, look on his head and you shall finde a gray haire for euerie line I haue writ against him; and you shall haue all his beard white too, by that time hee hath read ouer this booke. For his stature, he is such another pretie \textit{Jacke a Lent} as boyes throw at in the streete, and lookes in his blacke sute of veluet, like one of these ieat droppes which diuers weare at their eares in stead of a iewell. A smudge peice of a hand-
some fellow it hath beene in his dayes, but now he is olde and past his best, and fit for nothing but to be a Noble mans porter, or a Knight of Windsor, cares haue so crazed him, and disgraces to the verie bones consumed him; amongst which his missing of the Vniuersitie Oratorshipp, wherein Doctor Perne besteaded him, wrought not the lightliest with him; and if none of them were, his course of life is such, as would make any man looke ill on it, for he wil endure more hardnes than a Camell, who in the burning sands will liue foure dayes without water, & feeds on nothing but thistles and wormewood, & such lyke: no more doth he feed on any thing, when he is at Saffron-walden, but sheepes trotters, pork-nells, and butterd rootes; and other-while in an Hexameter meditation, or when hee is inventing a new part of Tully, or hatching such another Paradoxe, as that of Nicholaus Copernicus was, who held, that the Sun remains immoueable in the center of the World, & that the Earth is mou’d about the Sunne, he would be so rapt, that hee would remaine three dayes and neither eate nor drinke, and within doores he will keepe seven yeare together, and come not abroad so much as to Church. The like for seven and thirtie weekes space together he did, while he lay at Wolfes coppying against mee, neuer stirring
out of dores or being church'd all that while, but like those in the West country, that after the Paulin hath cal'd them, or they have seen a spirit, keep themselves dark 24. hours; so after I had plaid the spirit in hanting him in my 4. Letters cofuted, he could by no means endure the light, nor durst venture himself abroad in the open air for manie moths after, for feare he should be fresh blasted by all mens scorne and derision. My instructions of him are so overflowing and numberless, that except I abridge them, my Book will grow such a bouncer, that those which buy it must be faine to hire a porter to carry it after them in a basket. For breuitie sake I omit twentie things, as the conflict betwixt my Hostesse of the Dolphin in Cambridge, and him at my being there, about his lying in her house a fortnight, and keeping one of the best Chambers, yet never offering to spend a penie; the Hackney-mens of Saffron-walden pursuing him for their horses, he hiring them but for three dayes and keeping them fifteene, & telling him very flatly, when he went about to excuse it, that they could not spare them from their Cart so long, they being Cart horses which they fet him on. The description of that poore John a Droynes his man, whom he had hyred for that journey, a great big-board thresher, put in a blue
coate too short wafted for him, & a fute made of the inner linings of a fute turnd outward, being white canuas pinkt vpon cotton; his intollerable boasting at Wolfe to fuch as wold hold him chat, & he could draw to talk with him, that he thought no man in England had more learning than himselfe; hys threatening anie Noble-man whatsoeuer, that durft take my part, and vowing he would do this and that to him if he shou'd; his incensfing my L. Mayor againft me that then was, by directing vnto him a perfwafive pamphlet to persecute mee, and not to let flip the advantage hee had againft mee, and reporting certaine words I shuld speake against him that Christmas at a Tauerne in London, when I was in the Ile of Wight then and a great while after. His inciting the Preacher at Poulles Croffe, that lay at the fame house in Wood-ftrete which hee did, to preach manifeftly againft Master Lilly and mee, with, Woe to the Printer, woe to the Seller, woe to the Buyer, woe to the Author. But in none of these will I infift, which are remnants in comparifon of the whole piece I haue to shew; only I will haue a fhort tutch at Wolfe and his parting, and fo make an end of an old song, and bid god night to this Historie.

Pierfes Supererogation printed, the charge where-of the Doctor had promifed to defray and be count-
able to Wolfe for, amounting (with his diet) to 36 pounds, from Saffron-walden no argent would be heard of, wherefore, downe he must go amongst his ternaunts, as he pretended (which are no other than a company of beggers, that lye in an out barne of his mothers sometimes) and fetch vp the grand summes, or legem pone. To accomplish this, Wolfe procur'd him horses and money for his expences, lent him one of his Prentifes (for a seruing creature) to grace him, clapping an olde blue coate on his backe, which was one of my Lord of Harfords liueries (he pulling the badge off) & so away they went. Saint Christopher be their speed, and send them well backe againe; but so prayes not our Dominico Ciulian, for he had no such determination: but as soone as euer he had left London behinde him, he insinuated with this Inventus to run away frō his Master, and take him for his good Lord and supporter. The Page was easily mellowd with his attractive eloquence, as what heart of adamant, or enclosed in a Crocodyles skin (which no yron will pierce) that hath the power to withstond the Mercurian heauenly charme of hys Rhetorique? With him he stays halfe a yere, rubbing his toes, and following him, with his sprinkling glasse & his boxe of kissing comfets, from place to place; whiles his Master, fretting & chafing to be thus colted
of both of them, is readie to send out Proceedes for the Doctor, and get his Notice cride in every market Towne in Essex: but they prevented him, for the impe or stripling, being almost staru'd in this time of his being with him, gave him warning he would no longer serve him, but wold home to his master what ever shift he made. Gabriell thought it not amisse to take him at his word, because his clothes were all greasy and wore out, & he is never wont to keepe anie man longer than the fute lasteth he brings with him, and then turne him to graffe and get one in newe trappings; and ever picke quarrells with him before the yeares end, because hee would be sure to pay him no wages: yet in his prouident foresight, he concluded it better policie for him to send him backe to his Master, than he should goe of his owne accord, and whereas he was to make a journey to London within a weak or such a matter, to haue his blue coate (being destitute of ever another trencher-carrier) credit him vp, though it were thrid bare. So considered, and so done, at an Inne at Islington hee alights, and there keepes him aloofe, London being too hot for him. His retinue (or attendaunt), with a whole cloke-bag full of commendations to his master, he dismisseth, and in stead of the 36. pounds hee ought him, wild him to certifie him, that verie shortly hee would
fend him a couple of Hennes to Shroue with. Wolfe, receiuing this message, and holding himselfe palpably flouted therein, went and feed Baylies, and gets one Scarlet (a frend of his) to goe and draw him foorth, & hold him with a tale whiles they might steale on him and arrest him. The watch-word giu’n them when they shoule feaze vpon him, was Wolfe (I muſt needes say) hath / yfdde you verie groſely: and to the intent he might füpeſt nothing by Scarlets comming, there was a kind letter fram’d in Wolfes name, with To the right worshipful of the Lawes, in a great Text hand, for a superscription on the out-side; and vnderneath at the bottome, Your worships euer to commaund, and preſt to doo you service, John Wolfe. The contents of it were about the talking with his Lawier, and the eager proceeding of his Sister in law against him. This letter deliuered and read, and Scarlet and he (after the tafting of a cup of dead beere, that had stood pawling by him in a pot three dayes) desceding into some conference, he began to finde himſelfe ill apaid with Wolfes encroaching vpon him, and asking him money for the Printing of his Booke, and his diet, whiles he was close prifoner, attending and toyling about it, & obieſting how other men of leffe defert wer liberally recompensft for their paines, whereas he (whose worth ouer-balaunſt the proudeſt) muſt be
constrained to hire men to make themselves rich. I appeale to you (quoth hee) whether euer anie mans workes fold like mine? I, euen from a childe, good master Doctor, replide Scarlet, and made a mouth at him ouer his shouder, so soothing him on forward till the Baylies Cue came of Wolfes abusing him verie grofely, which they not failing to take at the first rebound, stept into the roome boldly (as they were two well bumbafted swaggering fat bellies, hauing faces as broad as the backe of a chimney, and as big as a towne bag-pudding) and clapping the Doctor with a lufty blow on the shoulde that made his legs bow vnder him, and his guts cry quag againe, by your leaue, they said vnto him (in a thundering yeoman vthers diapason) in / Gods name and the Queenes wee doe arrest you. Without more paufe, away they hurried him, & made him beleue they wold carry him into the Cittie, where his Creditor was, whē comming vnder Newgate, they told him they had occasion to goe speake with one there, and so thruf t him in before them for good manners sake, because he was a Doctor, and their better, bidding the Keeper, as soone as euer he was in, to take charge of him. Some lofty tragical Poet helpe mee, that is dayly conuerfant in the fierce encounters of Raw-head and bloody-bones, and whose pen, like the Plowes in Spayne that often

N. III.

10
flumble on golde vaines, still splits and stumps itselfe against olde yron and raking ore, battred Armour and broken Truncheons, to recount and expresse the more than Herculean fury he was in, when hee fawe hee was so notably betrayd, and bought and solde. Hee fumde, he stampt, he buffeted himselfe about the face, beat his head against the walls, and was ready to byte the flesh off his armes, if they had not hindred him: out of doores he would haue gone (as I cannot blame him) or hee swore hee would teare down the walls and set the house on fire, if they resisted him: whither, quoth he, you villains, haue you brought mee? To Newgate, good Master Doctour, with a lowe legge they made answer: I knowe not where I am. In Newgate, agayne replied they, good Master Doctour. Into some blinde corner you haue drawne me to be murdred: to no place (replied they the third time) but to Newgate, good Master Doctour. Murder, murder, (he cried out): some body breake in, or they will murder mee. No murder but an action of debt, sayd they, good Master Doctour. O you prophane / Plebeyans, exclaimd hee, I will massacre; I will crucifie you for presuming to lay hands thus on my reuerent person. All this would not serue him, no more than Hackets counterfet madness would keepe him from the Gallowes, but vp he was
had and shewed his lodging, where hee should lye by it, and willed to deliuer vp his weapon. That wrung him on the withers worse than all the rest. What my armes, my defence, my weapon, my dagger, quoth hee: my life then, I see, is conspired against, when you seek to bereaue me of the instruments that should secure it. They ratled him vp soundly, and told him if he would be conformable to the order of the prison so it was, otherwise hee should bee forc't: force him no forces, no such mechanicall drudges shoule haue the honor of his artillery: marry, if some worthy Maiestrate came, as their Master or Mistresse, it might be vpon good conditions, for his lifes safetie and preseruation hee woulde surrender. The mistresse of the house (her husband being absent) vnderstanding of his folly, came vp to him, and went about to perfwade him. At her sight somewhat calm'd hee was, as it is a true amorous Knight, and hath no power to deny any thing to ladies & gentlewomen, & he tolde her if she would command her seruants forth (whom hee scordnshould haue theyr eyes so much illuminated as to beholde any martiall engin of his) hee would, in all humility, dispoyle himselfe of it. Shee so farre yeelded to him, when as soone as they were out, he runs and swaps the doore too, & drawes his dagger vpon her with, O I will kill thee, what
could I doo to thee nowe? And so extremely terrified her, that she scritched out to her servants, who burst in in heapes, as thinking he would haue rauiht her. Neuer was our Taptharthurath (though hee hath run through manie briers) in the like ruthfull pickle hee was then, for to the bolts he must, amongst theeues and rogues, and tait of the Widdowes Almes for drawing his dagger in a Prison: fro which there was no deliveryance, if basely hee had not falne vpon his knees and askt hir forgiuences. Dinner being readie, he was cald downe, & there being a better man than hee present, who was plac’d at the vpper end of the boord, for very spite that hee might not fit higheft, he straight flung to his chamber againe, and vowed by heaven and earth and all the flesh on his backe, he would famish himselfe, before he would eate a bit of meate as long as he was in Newgate. How inuiolably hee kept it, I will not conceale from you. About a two howres after, when he felt his craw emptie, and his stomacke began to wamble, hee writ a Supplication to his Hofteffe, that he might speake with her; to whome (at her approach-ing) hee recited what a rash vow he had made, and what a commotion there was in his entrayles or pudding-house, for want of food; wherefore if she would steale to him a byt secretly, and let there be no words of it, hee would, I marry would
hee (when hee was releaft) perfourme mountaines. She (in pittie of him) seeing him a brain-sicke bedlam, and an innocent that had no fenfe to gouerne himselfe, being loth he should be damnd and go to hell for a meales meate, hauing vowd, and through famine readie to breake it, got her husband to go forth with him out of dores, to some Cookes fhop at Pye-corner there-abouts, or (as others will haue it) to the Tap-house vnder the prifon; where hauing eaten sufficient / his hungrie bodie to sustaine, the diuell a scute had he to pay the reckoning, but the keepers credite muft goe for it. How he got out of this Castle Dolorus, if anie be with childe to know, let them enquire of the Minifter then servyng at Saint Albanes in Wood-freet, who in Christian charitie, onely for the names fake (not being acquainted with him before) entred bod for him to anfwere it at law, & satisfied the house for his lodging and Mangerie. But being restored to the open aire, the case with him was little altrd, for no roofe had he to hide his noddle in, or whither he might go to set vp his rest, but in the ftreets vnder a bulk he shoule have been constringd to haue kenneld, & chalkt out his cabbin, if the said Minifter had not the second time stood his friend, and preferd him to a chamber at one Rolfes, a Serants in Wood-freete; whom (as I take it) he alfo procured to
be equally bound with him for his new coulens apparance to the law, which he neuer did, but left both of them in the lurtch for him: and running in debt with Rolfe beside for houfe-roome and diet, one day when he was from home, he closely counaid away his truncke foorth of doores, and shewde him a fayre paire of heeles. At Saffronwalden (for the most part) from that his flight to this present hath hee mewd and coopt vp himselfe invisibl, being counted for dead & no tidings of him, till I came in the winde of him at Cambridge. And so I winde vp his thrid of life, which, I feare, I haue drawne out too large, although in three quarters of it (of purpose to curtail it) I haue left descant, and talfkt me to plaine song: whereof, that it is anie other than plaine truth let no man distruft, it being by good men and true (word for word as I let it fly amongft / you) to mee in the feare of God vttred, all yet alieue to confirme it. Wherefore settte your faith immoueably, and now you haue heard his life, iudge of his doctrine accordingly.

Carnead. His life and doctrine may both be to vs an enexample, for since the raigne of Queen Gueniuer was there neuer seene worfe.

Import. Yet for all he is such a vaine Basilisco, and Captaine Crack-stone, in all his actions & conuerlation, & swarmeth in vile Canniball words,
there is some good matter in his booke against thee.

Respond. We will trie that matter immediately, for my minde euuer giuing mee, that wee shou'd haue you, and such like Humorists of your Fa&tion, runne from one matter to another, & from the matter to the manner, and from the manner to the forme, and from the forme to the cause, and from the cause to the effect, I prouided to match you at all weapons. And here, next his life, I haue drawen an Abridgement, or Inuentorise, of all the materiall Tractates and Contents of hys Booke.

Import. Then thou haft done well: for it is it that I all this while lookeft for. I pray thee, let me read it my selfe.

A Summarie, or breife Analytis, of such matters as are handled in the Doctors Booke.

Inprimis, one Epiftle, of a sheete and more of paper, to his gentle & liberall frends, Master Barnabe Barnes, Master John Thorius, Master Anthonie Chute, and euerie fauourable Reader.

Carenead. O ho, thofe whom hee calls the three orient wits. Mine eyes are partly accentarie unto it. It is to thanke them for their curteous Letters and commendatorie Sonnets, writ to him from a farre, as namely, out of the hall into the kitchin
at Wolfes, where altogether at one time they lodged and boarded. With a great manie maidenly excuses of, tis more of your gentlenes than my deferving, and I cannot, without blushing repeate, and without shame remember. Then he comes upon thee with, I'le, I'le, I'le.

Respond. What should I say, I will and command, like a Prince? hee might as well write against Poules for hauing three Iles in it.

Carnead. Hee calls thee the greene Popinjay, & faies thou art thine owne idoll.

Respond. Let him either shew how or wherein, or I will not beleue him, & my negatiue (in any ground in England) is as good as his affirmatiue.

Carnead. And so proceeds with complemente and a little more complemente, and a crust of quippes, and a little more complemente after that; then he falls in exhorting those his three Patrons to goe forward in maturitie, as they haue begun in pregnancie; whose Parthenophils and Parthenopes embellisshed, and Shores Wife eternized, shall everlastingly testifie what they are.

Respond. And so haue I testifie for them what they are, which will laft time enough.

Carnead. Hee bids Barnabe of the Barnes, bee the gallant Poet like Spencer, or the valiant Souldiour like Balkeruile; and euer remember his French Service under such a Generall.
Resond. What his Soldiourship is I cannot judge, but if you haue ever a chaine for him to runne awaye with, as hee did with a Noble-mans Stewards chayne at his Lords enstalling at Windfore; or if you would haue anie rymes to the tune of stink-a-pisse, hee is for you. In one place of his Parthenophill and Parthenope, wishing no other thing of Heauen, but that hee might bee transformed to the Wine his Mistres drinks, and so passe thorough her.

Bentiv. Therein he was verie ill adviide, for so the next time his Mistres made water, he was in danger to be cast out of her fauour.

Respond. Of late he hath set foorth another Booke, which hee entitles no leffe than A deuine Centurie of Sonets, and prefixeth for his posie,

Altera Musa venit, quid ni sit & alter Apollo?

As much to say, as why may not my Muse bee as great an Apollo, or God of Poetrie, as the proudef of them? but it comes as farre shot, as Paris Garden Cut of the height of a Cammell, or a Cocke-boate of a Carricke: such another deuice it is as the godly Ballet of John Carelesse, or the Song of Greene sheues moralized.

Carnead. For his Caualiershipe, since thou art not instructed in it, let mee tell thee, it is lewder by nine score times than his Poetry; since his
doughtie service in France five yeares agoe, I not
forgetting him: where, having followd the Campe
for a weeke or two, and seeing there was no care
had of keeping the Queens Peace, but a man might
have his braines knockt out, and no Justice or
Constable neere hand to send foorth precepts, and
make hue and crie after the murdrers; without
farther tarrying or consultation, to the Generall
he went, and told him he did not like of this
quarrelling kinde of life; and common occupation |
of murdring, wherein (without anie lurie or triall,
or giving them so much leaue, as to faye their
praiers) men were run thorough, and had their
throats cut, both against Gods lawes, her Maiesies
lawes, & the lawes of all Nations: wherefore hee
defir'd license to depart, for hee stood euerie howre
in feare and dread of his person, and it was
alwaies his praier, From fuddain death, good
Lord, deliuer vs. Vpon this motion, there were
diuerse warlike Knights and principall Captaines,
who, rather than they would bee bereaud of his
pleasant companie, offered to picke out a strong
guard amongst them, for the safe engarisoning and
better shielding him from perrill. Two stept
foorth and presented themselves as muskettiers be-
fore him, a third and fourth as taggatiers behinde
him, a fifth and sext vowed to trie it out at the
push of the pike before the malicious foe should
inuade him. But home hee would; nothing could stay him, to finish Parthenophil and Parthenope, and write in praise of Gabriell Haruey.

Conf. Hee was wife, hee lou'd no blowes: but what said the Doctor to his other two copesmates?

Carnead. Why thus: Be thou, Iohn, the many tungd linguist like Androwes, or the curious Intelligencer, like Bodley; & never forget thy Nederlandish Traine under him, that taught the prince of Nauarde, now the valorous King of France.

Respond. Of this Iohn Thorius more sparingly I wil speake, because hee hath made his peace with mee, & there bee in him fundrie good parts of the Tungs and otherwise; though thirtie parts comming behinde & limping after Doctor Androwes: who (if it bee no offence so to compare him) is tanquam Paulus in cathedra, / powerful preaching like Paul out of his chaire; and his Church another Pantheon, or Templum omnium deorum, the absolutely Oracle of all found deuinitie heere amongst vs; hee, mixing the two seuerall properties of an Orator and a Poet both in one, which is not onely to perswade, but to win admiration. Thorius, being of that modestie and honestie I ascribe to him, cannot but bee ursomly ashamed, to bee resembled so hyperborically, and no leffe agreeu'd than master
Bodley (a Gentleman in our Common-wealth of singular desertiuue reckoning & industrie, beeing at this present her Maiesties Agent in the Low countries) ought he to bee at the hellish detested Iudas name of an Intelligencer, which the Doctor in the waye of friendship hath throwne vpon him. Master Bodley calls him rascall & villaine for his labour, and before his going ouer was mad to know where he might hunt him out to bee reuengd: which both hee and Thorius haue reaason for, since but to be couerly suspected for an Intelligencer, (much more to be publiquely registred in Print for such a flearing false brother or Ambodexter) is to make eyther of them worfe pointed and wondered at than a cuckold or wit-tall, and let them vp as common marks for euerie iackanapes Prentife to kicke, spit, or throw durt at. To bee an Intelligencer is to haue oathes at will, and thinke God nere regards them; to frame his religion and alleageance to his Prince, according to euerie companie he comes in: a Iew he is, that but for the spoile loues no man; a curre, that flatters & fawns vpon euerie one, low crowching by the ground like a tumbler, till hee may spie an aduantage, and pluck out his throate. An ingrateverfull flaue, that there spendeth the/bitteresft of his venome, where hee hath receiued most benefites; a hang-man, that
dispatcheth all that come vnder his hands; a drunken serjeant, or sumner, that could not liue if (like the diuell) hee did not, from time to time, enquire after the finnes of the people; a necessarie member in a State to bee vsde to cut off vnnecessarie members. Such fame hath he preferd Master Bodley too, and wisheth Thorius to emulate. By his Netherlandishe trayne vnder him, that taught the Prince of Nauarre, now the valorous King of France, is not to bee gathered that hee was schoolefellow to the King of France, as he would faine put the world in a fooles Paradice, because hee hath sonnetted it in hys praise, but that hee was doctor Coranus sonne of Oxford, who was Tutor to the saide King, as well he might bee, and that no argument his sonne shoulde be so well improou’d as he is.

Carnead. The last of them is Chute, to whome hee thus dilateth. Be thou Anthonie the flowing Oratour, like Doue, and the skilfull Herald, like Clarencius; and euery remember thy Portugall Voyage vnder Don Anthonio.

Respond. Chute, is hee such a high Clearke in hys Bookes? I knew when hee was but a low Clarke, and carried an Atturnies bookes after him. But this I will say for him, though hee bee dead and rotten, and by his obsequeies hath preuented
the vengeaunce I meant to haue executed vpon him; of a youth that could not vnderftand a word of Latine, hee lou’d lycoras, and drunke posset curd, the beft that euer put cuppe to mouth; and for his Oratorfhip, it was fuch, that I haue feene him non plus in giuing the charge at the creating of a new Knight of Tobacco; though, to make amends fince, he hath kneaded and daub’d vp a Commedie, called The Transformation of the King of Trinidaddoes two Daughters, Madame Panachea and the Nymphe Tobacco: and to approue his Heraldrie, fcutchench out the honourable Armes of the smoakie Societie. His voyage vnder Don Anthonio was nothing fo great credit to him, as a French Varlet of the chamber is; nor did he follow Anthonio neither, but was a Captaines Boye that scornd writing and reading, and helpt him to fet downe his accounts, and score vp dead payes. But this was our Graphiel Hagiels tricke of Wily Beguily herein, that whereas he could get no man of worth to crie Placet to his workes, or meeter it in his commendation, those worthleffe Whippets and Iack Strawes hee could get, he would feeme to enable and compare with the higheft. Hereby hee thought to connycatch the simple world, and make them beleuee, that thefe and thefe great men, euerie waye futable to Syr Thomas Bafkeruile, Master Bodley, Doctor Androwes, Doctor Doue,
Clarencius and Master Spencer, had seperately contended to outstrip Pindarus in his Olympicis, and fly aloft to the higheft pitch, to tellifie him aboue the cloudes, and make him shine next to Mercury. Here some little digression I must borrow, to reuenge his base allusion of Sir Thomas Baskeruile, eu'n as I haue done of Doctor Androwes; neither of them being men that euer saluted mee, or I rest bound vnto in anie thing, otherwise than by Doctor Androwes own desert, and Master Lillies immoderate commending him, by little and little I was drawne on to bee an auditor of his: since when, whensoever I heard him, I thought / it was but hard and scant allowance that was giu'n him, in comparison of the incomparable gifts that were in him. For Sir Thomas Baskeruile, France, England, the Low Countries, & India, acknowledgeth him; and though it was neuer my hap, but once in a young Knights Chamber in the Strand (none of my coldeft well-wiftiers) to light in his companie, yet for Syr Roger Williams testimonie of him (a noble Gentleman that a yeare and a halfe before his death, I was excceffiuely beholding too, & on whom I haue vowd, when my busines are a little overcome, to beftow a memoriall Epitaph, such as Plato would in no more but foure verses to bee set vpon the graues of the dead) downe his throate
I will thrust this turn-broach comparison of a chicken and a chrisome with one of the most tryed Souldiers of Christendome. Doctor Dowe and Clarencius I turne loose to bee their owne Arbitrators and Adovcates; the one being eloquent enough to defend himselfe, and the other a Vice roy & next Heyre apparant to the King of Heralds, able to emblazon him in his right colours, if hee finde hee hath sustained any losse by him: as also, in like fort, Master Spencer, whom I doo not thrust in the lowest place, because I make the lowest valuation of, but as wee vs to set the *Summ' tol'* alway vnderneath, or at the bottome, he being the *Sum' tol'* of whatsoeuer can be said of sharpe inuention and schollership.

Confil. Of the Doct or it may be said, as Ouid sayth of the Scritch owle.

Aliisque (dolens) fit causa dolendi.

*Hee cannot bee content to bee miserable himselfe, but hee must draw others to miscarrie with him. And as Plato had his best beloued Boy Agatho, Socrates his Alcibiades, Virgill his Alexis; so hath hee his Barnabe and Anthony for his minions and sweet-harts: though therein I must needes tell him (as Fabritius the Romane Consull wrat to Pirrhus when he sent him back his Phisition that offred to poysfon him) hee hath made as ill choyce of frends as of*
enemies; seeking, like the Panther, to cure himselfe with mans dung, and with the verie excrements of the rubishest wits that are, to restore himselfe to his bloud, and repaire his credit and estimation.

Bentiv. If his Patrons bee such Peter Pingles and Moundragons, hee cannot chuse but bee sixtie times a more poore Slauonian arse-worme.

Respond. Tender itchie brainde infants, they car'd not what they did, so they might come in print: and of that straine are a number of mushrumpes more, who pester the World with Pamphlets before they haue heard of Terence Pamphilus, & can construe & pearse Proh Dii immortales; being like those barbarous People in the hot Countries, who, when they haue bread to make, doo no more but clap the dowe vpon a poafte on the out-side of their house, and there leave it to the Sunne to bake; so their indigested conceits (farre rawer than anie dowe) at all adventures vpon the poaftes they clap, pluck them off who's will: and if (like the Sunne) anie man of judgement (though in scorne) do but looke vpon them, they thinke they haue strooke it dead, and made as good a batch of Poetrie as may be. Neither of these princockesves (Barnes or Chute) once cast vp their noles towards Powles Church-yard, or so much as knew how to knock at a Printing house dore, till they consorted themselves with Haruey, who infected / them
within one fortnight with his owne spirit of Bragganisme : which after so increased and multi-
plied in them, as no man was able to endure them. The first of them (which is Barnes) presently vppon
it, because hee would bee noted, getting him a
strange payre of Babilonian britches, with a cod-
piffe as big as a Bolognian sawcedge, and so went
vp and downe Towne, and shewed himfelfe in the
Prefence at Court, where he was generally laught
out by the Noble-men and Ladies: and the other
(which is Chute) because Haruey had praised him
for his Oratorship & Heraldry, to approe himfelfe
no leffe than hee had giu'n his word for him, fets
his mouth of a new key, and would come foorth
with such Kenimnawo compt metaphors and phrases,
that Edge was but a botcher to him; and to em-
blazon his Heraldrie, he painted himfelf like a
Curtizan, which no stationers boy in Poules
Church-yard but discouered and pointed at. One
of the beft Articles against Barnes I haue ouer-
flipt, which is, that he is in print for a braggart in
that vnuerfall applauded Latine poem of master
Campions; where, in an Epigram entituled In
Barnum, beginning thus,

Mortales decem tela inter Gallica cæsos,

he shewes how hee bragd, when he was in France,
he flue ten men, when (fearfull cowbaby) he
neuer heard peice shot off but hee fell flat on his face. To this effect it is, though the words somwhat varie.

Carnead. Alloune, alloune, let vs march, and from armes and skirmishing, cast thy selfe in the armes of a sweete Gentlewoman, that here, at the end of the Epifle, stands readie to embrace thee. Gabriell calls her the excellent Gentlewoman, his patronesse, or rather championesse, | in this quarrell, meeter by nature, and fitter by nurture, to bee an inchaunting Angell with a white quill, than a tormenting furie with her blacke incke.

Respond. What, is he like a Tinker, that neuer trauailes without his wench and his dogge? or like a Germane, that neuer goes to the warres without his Tannakin and her Cocke on her shouder? That Gentlewoman (if she come vnder my fifts) I will make a gentle-woman, as Doctor Perne faid of his mans wife,

\[\text{Tunc plena voluptas,}\
\text{Cum pariter vi\textit{t}i f\textit{a}mina virq. iacent.}\]

Then it is sport worth the seeing, when he and his woman lye crouching for mercie vnder my feete. I will bestow more cost in belabouring her, because, throughout the whole pawnch of his booke, hee is as infinite in commending her, as Saint Ierome in prai\v s of Virginitie; and
oftener mentions her, than Virgill & Theocritus Amaris. In one place he calls her the one shee, in another the credible Gentlewoman, in a third the heavenly plant, in the fourth a new starre in Cassiopeia, in the fifth the heavenly creature, in the sixteth a Lion in the field of Minerva, in the seuenth a right Bird of Mercuries winged chariot, with a hundred such like: he faith, she hath read Homer, Virgill, the divine Architipes of Hebrue, Greeke, and Romane valour, Plutarch, Polien, Agrippa, Tyraquell.

Bentiv. I haue found him, I haue the treat of him: hee thinkes in his owne person if hee should raile grofely, it will bee a discredite to him, and therefore hereafter hee would thrust foorth all his writings under the name of a Gentlewoman; who, howsoever shee scolds and playes the vixen neuer so, wilbe borne with: and to preuent that hee bee not descride by his alleading of Authors (which it will hardly bee thought can proceed from a woman) hee casts forth this Item, that she hath read these and these books, and is well seene in all languages.

Consil. Shall we haue a Hare of him then? a male one yeare, and a female another: or as Pliny holds there is male and female of all things under heauen, and not so much but as of trees and precious stonies; so cannot there be a male Confuter, but there must be a female confuter too; a Simon
Magus, but hee must haue his whoor[e Silenes; an Aristotle that sacrific[e to his harlot Hermia, but euerie Silius Poeta must imitate him? Doth he, when his owne wits faile, cry Da Venus consilium? Holy Saint Venus inspire mee? But as Bentioule hath wel put in, Pars minima est ipfa puella fui. I beleue it is but a meere coppy of his countenaunce, and onely hee does it to breed an opinion in the world, that he is such a great man in Ladies and Gentlewomens bookes, that they are readie to run out of their wits for him, as in the Turkes Alchoron it is written, that 250 Ladies hanged themselves for the loue of Mahomet, and that, like another Numa Pompilius, he doth nothing without his Nymph Egeria.

Imp. Nay, if Jupiter ioynd with the Moone (Haruey and his Gentlewoman) conspire against thee, & that, like another Meffier Gallan, the hangman of Antwerp, he hath a whole Burdeil under his gouernement, it cannot chufe but goe hard with thee. She will say, as the Italian Lady did, Kill my children as long as thou wilt, here is the mould to make more.

Confil. We read that Semiramis was in loue with a Horse, but for a Gentlewoman to bee in loue with an Afle [a] is such a tricke as neuer was.

Respond. It would doo you good to heare how he gallops on in commending her: hee
fayes shee enuies none, but art in person and vertue incorporate, and that she is a Sappho, a Penelope, a Minerva, an Arachne, a Juno, yeelding to all that vse her and hers well, that she stands vpon masculine and not feminine termes, & her hoaste fury may be resembled to the passing of a braue Careere by a Pegasus, and wisheth hartily that he could dispose of her recreations.

Carnead. Call for a Beadle and haue him away to Bridewell, for in euery fillable he commits letchery.

Resp. He threatens shee will stripl my wit into his shirt, were that fayre body of the sweetest Venus in print, & that it will then appeare, as in a cleare vrinall, whose wit hath the greene sicknes.

Bent. If shee stript thee to thy shirt, if I were as thee, I wold stript her to her smocke.

Carnead. That were to put that fayrest body of Venus in Print, indeede, with a wittnes, and then shee never need to haue her water caft in an vrinall for the greene sicknes.

Respond. She may be Queene Didoes peere for honestie, for anie dealings I euer yet had with her; but anie Gentlewomans name put in his mouth, it is of more force to discredite it than Licophrons penne was to discredite Penelope, who, notwithstanding Homers praises of her, faith shee lay with all her wooers.
TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

Concil. Whether shee be honest or no, he hath done enough to make her dishonest, since as Ouid writes to a Leno, Vendibilis culpa facia puella sua eft, he hath set her commonly to sale in Poules Church-yard.

Import. Let us on with our Index or Catalogue, and descant no more of her, since I am of the minde that, for all the stormes & tempests Haruey from her denounceth, there is no such woman, but tis onely a Fition of his, like Menanders Fable or Comedie, call'd Thesfala, of women that could pluck back the Moone when they listed; or Ennius inuention of Dido, who, writing of the deedes of Scipio, first gave life to that Legend. The Epifle Deducatorie past, the Gentlewomen's demurre, or Prologue, staggeres next after, the first line whereof is stolne out of the Ballet of Anne Askew; for as that begins,

I am a woman poore and blinde,

so begins this,

O Mufes, may a woman poore and blinde,

and goes on,

If it possible for pulling wench to tame
The furibundall champion of fame?

Bids thee hazard not panting quill thy aspen felse, calls thee bombard-goblin, and moft raili-
potent for euerie raine; then followeth shee with a counter Sonnet, or correction of her owne preamble, where there is nothing but braggarious affronts, white liuerd tronts, where doth the vranie or furie ring, pulcrow implements, Danters scar-crow Presse; and endes with, Vltrix accincta flagello.

Respond. Yea, Madam Gabriela, are you such an old ierkker? then, Hey ding a ding, vp with your petticoate, haue at your plum-tree: but the style bewraies it, that no other is this good-wif Megara but Gabriel himself; so doth the counter-sonnet and the correction of preambles, which is his methode as right as a fiddle. I will neuer open my lips to confute anye rag of it, it confuting / it selfe sufficiently in the verie rehearsall. And so doth that which is annexed to it, of her olde Comedie new intituled, where she faith her profe is as resolute as Beuis sword, calls mee rampant beast in formidable hide, with I wot not what other Getulian flabberies; scarre-bugges mee with a Comedie which shee hath scrawld and scribeld vp against mee. But wee shall lenuoy him, and trumpe and poope him well enough if the winde come in that doore, and he will needes fall a Comedizing it. Comedie vpon Comedie he shall haue, a Morall, a Historie, a Tragedie, or what hee will. One shal bee called The Doctors dumpe,
another, Haruey and his excellent Gentlewoman, Madame Whipsidoxy, a third, The triumphes of Saffron-walden, with the merrie conceptions of Wee three, or, The three Brothers; a fourth, Stoope Gallant, or The Fall of Pride; the fifth and laft, A pleasant Enterlude of No Foole to the old Foole, with a Jigge at the latter ende in English Hexameters of, O neighbour Gabriell, and his wooing of Kate Cotton. More than half of one of these I haue done alreadie, and in Candlemas Tearme you shal fee it acted, though better acted than hee hath been at Cambridge, hee can neuer bee; where vpon euerie stage hee hath beene brought for a Sicophant and a Sow-gelder.

Bent. Wilt thou haue nere a plucke at him for Danters scar-crow prefTe, and so abusing thy Printer?

Resp. In pudding time you haue spoken: my Printer, who euer, shall sustaine no damage by me: & where hee tearmeth his PrefTe a Scar-crow PrefTe, hee shall find it will scare & crow ouer the best PrefTe in London, that shall Print a Reply to This. Hee that dares moft, let him trie it (as none will trie it that hath a care to liue by his trade, not a hundred of anie Impression of the Doctors bookees euer felling). My Printers Wife too, hee hath had a twitch at in two or three places about the midst of his booke, and makes a maulkin & a shoo-clout of her, talkes of her moody tung, and
that she wil teach the storme winde to scolde English; but let him looke to himselfe, for though in all the time I haue lyne in her House, and as long as I haue known her, I never saw anie such thing by her; yet since hee hath giu’n her so good a cause to finde her tung, and so vnuitly & despitefully prouok[t] her, shee will tell him such a tale in his eare, the next time shee meetes him, as shall bee worse than a Northern blast to him, and haue a hand full of his beard (if hee defend not himselfe the better) for a maulkin, or wispe, to wyp[e] her shooes with.

Import. The Gentlewoman hauing taken her Lenuoy or farewell, Barnabe Barnes steeps in with, An Epifle to the right Worshipfull his especiall deare Frend, M. Gabriell Haruey, Doctor of the Law.

Respo. It were no booke elles, if one or other were not drawne in to call him Right Worshipfull: & when hee hath no bodie to help him, he gets one of his Brothers to Epifle it to him, or, in their absence, faines an Epifle in their names, where his style to the ful shalbe set in great letters, like a Bill for a house to be let: and upon paine of excommunication, with bell book & candle, none of his Brothers must publish anie thing, but to his Dottrel-ship they must frame the like dedication.
TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

Import. The tenure of that scrimpum scrampum of Barnefes is no more but this, to exhort the sweet Doctor (as hee names him) to confound those viperous critall monsters, whereto hee is manifestly urged; though hee fitter / to encounter some more delicate Paranymphe, and honour the Vrany of Du Bartas. Hee hath a Sonet with it, wherein hee invokes and coniures vp all Romes learned Orators, sweete Grecian Prophets, Philosophers, wifefst States-men, reuerend generall Councells, all in one, to behold the Doctors ennobled Arts, as precious stones in gold. At the foote of that (like a right Pupill of the Doctos bringing vp) hee infecteth his post-script or correction of his Preamble, with a Counter-sonnet, superscribed Nash, or the confuting Gentleman. In which he besmeares and reuiles thee with all the cutpurse names that is possible, and sayes hee cannot bethinke him of names ill enough, since thou raylest at one, whom Bodine & Sidney did not flatter.

Respond. No more will I flatter him; hee may build upon it. Thus it is: there was sometimes some pretie expectation of this Patter-wallet & Megiddo, that now I am a falting and poudring of; and then Sir Philip Sidney (as he was a natural cherisher of men of the leaft towardnes in anie Arte whatsoeuer) held him in some good regard, and so did most men; & (it may be) some kinde letters hee writ to him, to encourage
and animate him in those his hopefull courses he was entred into: but afterward, when his ambitious pride and vanitie vnmaskt it selfe so egregiously, both in his lookes, his gate, his gestures, and speaches, and hee would do nothing but cracke and parret it in Print, in how manie Noble-mens fauours hee was, and blab euerie light speach they vttred to him in private, cockering & coying himselfe beyond imagination; then Sir Philip Sidney (by little and little) began to looke askance on him, and not to care for him, though vttterly shake him off hee / could not, hee would so fawne & hang vpon him. For M. Bodines commendation of him, it is no more but this, one comple- mentarie Letter asketh another; & Gabriell first writing to him, and seeming to admire him and his workes, hee could doo no leffe in humanitie (beeing a Scholler) but returne him an answere in the like nature. But my yong Master Barnabe the bright, and his kindnes (before anie desert at all of mine towards him might plucke it on or prouoke it) I neither haue, nor will bee vnmindfull of.

Import. Here is another Sonet of his, which hee cals Haruey, or The Sweete Doctour, consisting of Sidney, Bodine, Hatcher, Lewen, Wilfon, Spencer; that all their life time haue done nothing but conspire to lawd and honour Poet Gabriell.

Respond. Misericum est suisse felicem. It is a
miserable thing for a man to be said to haue had frends, and now to haue nere a one left.

Import. What faift thou to the Printers Advertisement to the Gentleman Reader?

Respond. I say, ware you breake not your shins in the third line on preambles and postambles; and that it is not the Printers, but Harueys.

Imp. In it he makes mention of Thorius & Chutes sonets to bee added, prefixed, inserted or annexed at the latter ende.

Respond. The latter end? but the beginning of the tyde, it may bee, for the flowing.

Import. As also a third learned French Gentlemans verses, Monsieur Fregevile Gautius, who, both in French and Latine, hath publisht some weightie Treatises.

Respond. Were they weightie Treatises? the Printers / purfe neuer so; but in this respect they might bee tearmd to be weightie, that they were so heauie, they would nere come out of Poules Church-yard. I will haue a found lift at him anone, for all his Mathematical deuices of his owne inuention, wherewith hee hath acquainted Ma. Doctour Haruey, nothing so good as a knife with prickles in the haft, or these Boyes paper-dragons that they let fly with a pack-thrid in the fields.

Import. His booke.
HAVE WITH YOU

Charles

Respond. Hand off, there is none but I will have the unclasping of that, because I can do it nimbly. It is divided into four parts; one against mee, the second against M. Lilly, the third against Martinis, the fourth against D. Perne. Neither are these parts seuerally distinguished in his order of handling, but, like a Dutch stewd-pot, imbled altogether, and linsey-wolsey woven one within another. But one of these parts falleth to my share, I being bound to answer for none but my selfe; yet if I speake a good word now & then for my friends by the way, they have the more to thanke mee for.

Incipit Caput primum.

I was neuer unwilling to undertake anie thing, &c.

You ly, you ly, Gabriell, I know what you are about to saie, but Ile shred you off three leaves at one blowe. You were most willing to undertake this controwerfy, for els you would neuer have first begun it; you wold neuer have lyne writing against mee here in London, in the verie hart of the Plague, a whole Summer; or after (through your Frends intreatie) we were reconcilde, popt out your Booke against me. Now say what you will of being vrgd, loosing of time, impudencie and slander, & another Table Philo-
Saffron-Walden.

jophie that ye fancy; for there is not a dog vnnder the table that will beleue you.

Sa ho: hath Apuleius euer an Atturney here? One Apuleius (by the name of Apuleius) he endites to be an engroffr of arts and inuentions, putting downe Plato, Hippocrates, Aristotle, and the Paragraphs of Isthinian. Non est inuentus: there's no such man to be found; let them that haue the Commandion for the Concealments looke after it, or the Man in the Moone put for it. Gabriell casts a vile leaning eye at me, as who should faye, he quipt me secretly vnnder it, if he durft vtter so much. Also, in that which succeedeth of One that is a common contemner of God and man, stampes and treades vnnder his foote the reverenest old and new Writers, opposeth himselfe against Universities, Parliaments, and generall Councells, encloseth all within his owne braine, and is a changer, an innovater, a cony-catcher, a rimer, a rayler, that out-faceth heauen and earth. But soft you now, how is all this or anie part of this to bee prou'd? make account he will (vpon his oath) denie it. Hath he spoken, printed, written, contriued, or imagined, or caus'd to bee spoken, written, printed, contriued, or imagined anie thing against these? or exprest in his countenaunce the least wincke of dislike of them? Let some instance of that be produced,
and he be not able to refute it; Ile vndertake for him (which is the most ignominiuous impo-
sition he can tie himselfe to) he shall giue thee his tung for a rag to wype thy taile with, and haue his right hand cut off for thy mother to hang out for an ale house signe. Cannot a man declaime against a Catalanian and a Hethite, a Moabite Gabriell, and an Amorite Dicke, but all the ancient Fathers, all the renouned/Philosop-
phers, Oratours, Poets, Historiographers, and old & new excellent Writers must bee disparaged and trode vnder foote, God and man contemned and set at nought? Vniuerfities, Parliaments, generall Counccells oppugned? and he must be another Romane Palemon, who vaunted all Science began and ended with him? a changer, an innouater, a cony-catcher, a raier, an out-facer of heauen and earth.

Is there such high treason comprehended vnder calling a foppe a foppe, & cudgelling a curre for his snarling? Or is it thus, our iracundious Stramutzen Gabriell, standing much vpon his reading, and that all the Libraries of the auncient Fathers, renowned Philofophers, Poets, Orators, Historiographers, and olde and new excellent Writers, are hoofed vp in the Amalthæas Horne of his braine, with whatsoeuer Conftitutions and Decretalls of generall Counccells and Parliaments?
and for he hath commenst in both Vniuersities, therefore he concludes, He which writes against him must write against them all, & so (per consequens) vaunt him aboue all; and if he vaunts him aboue them all, he is a changer, an innovater, an impostor, a raile at all, & confounds heauen and earth. This is the tydieft Argument he can frame to make his matter good, though it followes no more, than that a man should bee helde a traitor, and accused to haue abuside the Queene and Counfaile, and the whole State, for calling a fellowe knaue that hath read the Booke of Statutes, since by them all in generall they were made.

Carn. Thou art vnwise to canuaze it so much, for hee thrust it in but for a Rhetoricall figure of amplification.

Respond. Rhetoricall figure? and if I had a hundred sonnes, I had rather haue them disfigur'd, & keep them at home as cyphers, than fend them to schoole to learn to figure it after that order.

Carnead. You may haue them worse brought vp, for so you should be sure neuer to haue them counted lyers, since Rhetoricians, though they lye neuer so grosely, are but saied to haue a luxurious phrase, to bee eloquent amplifiers, to bee full of their pleasant Hyperboles, or speake by Ironies; and if they
raise a slander upon a man of a thing done at home, when hee is a 1000. mile off, it is but Prolo-
popeya, personæ fictio, the supposing or faining of a person: and they will alledge Tully, Demos-
thenes, Demades, Aeschines, and shew you a whole Talæus & Ad Herennium of figures for it, foure 
and fiftie times more licentious. These Arith-
metique figures are such, like juggling transformers, 
lying by Addition and Numeration, making frays 
and quarrelling by Divisio, getting wenches with 
childe by Multiplication, stealing by Subtraction; 
and if in these humors they have conjund all, and 
are faine to breake, they doo it by Fraction.

Respond. That last part of Arithmetique (which 
is Fraction, or breaking,) I intend to teach 
Gabriel; though to all the other, as Addition, Deuision, 
Rebating, or Substraction, of his owne ingrafted 
disposition hee is apt enouge; and so hee is to 
Multiplication too, hee hauing, since I parted with 
him laft, got him a Gentlewoman.

Bentiv. Both thou and hee talke much of that 
Gentlewoman, but I would we might know her, and 
see her unbuskt and naked once, as Paris, in Lucians 
Dialogues, desires Mercury hee might see the three 
goddefes naked, that strove for the golden Ball.

Carnead. The Venus shee is that would win it 
from them all, if the controversie were now afloat 
againe: and, which thou pretermitted before, hee
puts her in print for a Venus, yet desires to see her a Venus in print; publisheth her for a strumpet (for no better was Venus) and yet he would have her a strumpet more publique.

Respond. By that name had hee not so publifht her, yet his peacocke-pluming her like another Pandora, (from Poets too parasiticall commending of whome first grew the name of Pandare, though Sir Philip Sidney fetcheth it out of Plautus) through his incredible praifing of her, I say, (wherein one quarter of his Book is spent,) he hath brought all the world into a perfwafion, that shee is as common as Rubarbe among Phifitions; since (as Thucidides pronounceth) shee is the honestest woman, of whose praise, or dispraise, is least spoken. My pen, he prodigally insulteth, shee shall pumpe to as drie a sponge as anie is in Hosier Lane, and wring our braines like emptie purses. Idem per idem in senfe he speaks, though it be not his comparison, and; Tamburlain-like, hee braves it indefinently in her behalfe, setting vp bills, like a Bear-ward or Fencer, what fights we shall have, and what weapons she will meete me at.

Con. Fasilia, the daughter of Pelagius, King of Spain, was tore in peices by a Beare; & so I hope thou wilt tear her and tug with her, if she begin once to playe the Deuill of Dowgate: but as there was a woman in Roome, that had her childe slaine
with thunder and lightning in her wombe ere she was deliuered, so it is like inough hers will bee, and prove an Embrión, and we shall neuer see it: or if wee doo, looke for another armed Pallas issuing out of Ioues braine, or an Amazonian Hippolite, that will bee good/ inough for Theseus; or the female of the Apsis, who (if her mate be kild by any passenger in the way) thorough fire, thorough the thickest assembly she will pursue him, or anieathing but water.

Bentiv. In some Countreys no woman is so honorable as she that hath had to doo with most men, and can give the lustieast striker oddes by 25 times in one night, as Messalina did; and so it is with this his bratche, or bitch-foxe.

Consil. Agelaustus, Grand-father to Crassus, neuer laught but once in his life, and that was to see a mare eate thistles; so this will be a iest to make one laugh that lyes a dying, to see a Gillian draggell taile run her taile into a busbe of thornes, because her nailes are not long inough to scratch it, and play at wasters with a quil for the britches.

Carm. Multi illum iuuenes multæ petiere puellæ, Boyes, wenches, and euery one pursue him for his beauty.

Non caret effectu, quod voluere duo,

Thou canst neuer hold out, if thou wert Hercules, if two to one encounter thee.
Respo. Quis nisi mentis inops teneræ declamat amicæ. Who but an Ingram coquet would keepe such a courting of a Curtezan, to haue her eombat for him; or doo as Dick Haruey did, (which information piping hot in the midst of this line was but brought to mee) that, hauing preacht and beat downe three pulpits in inueighing against dauncing; one Sunday euening, when hys Wench, or Friskin, was footing it aloft on the Greene, with foote out and foote in, and as busie as might be at Rogero, Baslino, Turkelony, All the flowers of the broom, Pepper is black, Greene sleeues, Peggie Ramsay, he came sneaking behinde a tree and lookt on, and though hee was loth to be seene to countenance the sport, hauing laid / Gods word against it so dreadfully, yet to shew his good-will to it in hart, hee sent her 18. pence, in hugger mugger, to pay the fiddlers: let it sink into ye, for it is true & will be verefide. Let Gabriel verefie anie one thing so against mee, and not thinke to carrie it away with hys generall extenuatings, ironicall amplificat-ions, and declamatorie exclamations. Nor let him muckehill vp so manie pages in sayng he lookt for termes of aqua fortis, and gunpowder, and that I haue thundred and giu'n out tragically, when nought appears but the sword of cats-meate, and the fire-brand of dogs-meate, and, Aut nunc aut nunquam, and two staues and a pike: but let him shew what
part of that his first Booke I haue not, from the
crowne to the little toe, confuted, and laid as open
as a cuftard, or a cowsheard; and if my Booke
bee cats-meate and dogs-meate, his is much worse,
fince on hys mine hath his whole foundation and
dependance, and I doo but paraphrase vpon his
text. Something that he grounds this cats-meate
and dogs-meate on, I will not with-stand but I
haue lent him; as in my Epiftle to Apis lapis,
where I wish him to let Chaucer be new fcowrd
againft the day of battaile, and Terence but come in
now and then with the snuffe of a sentence and
Dictum puta, weel strike it as dead as a doore-
naile, Haud teruntii estimo, we haue cats-meate &
dogs-meate inough for these mungrels. Hence, as
if I had continually harpt vppon it, in euerie
tenth line of my Book he faith, I do nothing
but affaile him with cats-meat & dogs-meat, when
there is not anie more spoken of it than I haue
shewd you. So, Aut nunc aut nunquam he brings
in for a murdring fhot, beeing neuer my posie,
but, Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice, at the latter
end of my Foure Letters; spea/king to him,
that he shuld not go about to anfwer me, except
he fet it foundly on; for otherwise, with a found
counterbuffe I would make his eares ring againe,
and haue at him with two ftauues & a pike,
which was a kinde of old verfe, in request before
he fell a rayling at Turbervile or Elderton. Some Lycophrenes reading (which showes plodding & no wit) he hath giu’n a twinkling glimps of, & like a school-boy said ouer his gear to his vneckles & kinsfolk, and tels what Authours he hath read, when he floted in the sea of encounters; which, for ought he hath alleadgd out of them, he may haue stolne by the whole sale out of Ascanius, or Andrew Maunfells English Catalogue. No villaine, no Atheift, no murdrer, no traitor, no Sodomite, hee euer read of but he hath likend mee too, or in a superlatiue degree made me a monfter beyond him, for no other reason in the earth, but because I would not let him go beyond me, or be won to put my finger in my mouth, & crie mumbudget, when he had baffuld mee in print throughout England. The victorioufte Captaines and Warriours, the invinciblest Cæsars and Conquerours, the satyricallest confuters, and Luthers (like whom the Germanes affirme neuer anie in their tung writ fo forcible) in an Alphabet he towles vp, and fayes I out-strip them all, I fet them all too schoole. The quorjum, or quare, if you demaund, is this, I haue outstript and fet him to schoole, and he is sure he is a better man than anie of them. The verie guts and garbage of his Note-book he hath put into this tallow loafe, & not left anie Frezeland, Dutch, or Almain
scrib(e) (where they Commence, and doo their Actes, with writing Bookes) that hath but squibd foorth a Latin *Puerilis* in Print, or set his name to a Catechisme, vncooped or vnscord. A true Pellican he is, that peirceth his breast & lets out all his bowels to giue life to his yong. No Author but himselfe and *Nashe* hereafter he can cyte, which hee hath not stellified worse than *Sapiës dominabitur astra*; the ordinarie Poifie for all Almanackes, or the presenting of *Artaxerxes* with a cup of water, vide in euerie Epistle Dedicatorie; and those two hee hath wrought reasonably vpon, hauing wore the first (which is himselfe) naplesse, & the other owes him nothing. Against blasphemous *Seruetus*, or *Muretus*, or *Sunius*, that haue been so bold with her Maieftie and this State, was thys Inuedliue of his first armd and aduanced; which (vppon the misling his preferment, or aduauncement, in Court) he suppreft, and in the bottom of a rustie hamper let it yse asleepe by him (euen as he did the Advertisement againft *Paphatchet & Martin*, which he hath yoakt with it, by his own date, euer since 89.) and now, with putting in new names here and there of *Nashe* & *Piers Pennileffe*, he hath so pannyerd and dreft it that it seemes a new thing, though there be no new thing in it that claimes anie kindred of mee, more than a dozen
of famisht quips, but like a lose French cassock, or gabberdine, would fit any man. Those more appropriate blowes ouer the thumbe are these. *My prai sing of Are tine*; so did he before me, the verie words whereof I haue fet downe in my other Booke: *my excepting against his Doctorship*; better Doctors than eu er he wil be put it in my head, and if therein I misreport, I erre by authoritie. *My calling him a fawne-guest messenger betwixt M. Bird and M. Demetrius, in the companie of one of which he neuer din'd nor sipt this 6 yeres; & for the other he neuer drunke with to this day*:

he may be a fawn-guest in his intent neuertheles, and if he neither eate nor drunck at M. Demetrius, why did he so familiarly write to him, M. Demetrius in your absence I found your wife verie curteous? For a great trespass he layes it to me, in that I haue praised her Maifties affabilitie towards f[chollers, and attributed to Noble-men so much policy & wifdome as to haue a priuy watch word in their praijcs, and crosing his sleight opinion of Inuestiues and Satyres. Like Sophifticall Dis-puters that onely rehearse, not answere, he runs on telling how I haue fatherd on him a new part of Tully, which he fetcht out of a wall at Barnwell, euen as Poggius in an old Monaiferie found out a new Part of Quintillian, after it had bin manie hundred yeres lost; my taking upon me to be
Greenes aduocate, my threatning so incessantly to haunt the Civilian and the Deuine, that to avoid the hot chafe of my ferie quill, they shall be constrained to enjkonfe themselves in one of their Phiftion Brothers old urinall cases; my calling him butter-whore, & bidding him, Rip, rip, you kitchin-fiufte wrangler; my accusing him of carterly derifsions and milk-maids girds, as, Good beare bite not, A man's a man thogh he hath but a hose on his head. Pulchre mehercule dicium, lapienter, laute, lepidè, nil suprà, nothing so good as the iefts of the Councell Table afle, Richard Clarke.

Carnead. Yes, that he doth more than rehearse, for he maintains them to be the Ironies of Socrates, Aristophanes, Epicharmus, Lucian, Tully, Quintillian, Sanazarius, K. Alphonfus, Cardan, Sir Th. Moore, Iohocrates: looke the firs: 156 Page of his Booke, & ye shal finde it so.

Bentiv. What, had they no better iefts than Good beare bite not, or A man is a man though he hath but a hose / on his head: Pulchre mehercule dicium? O, dishonor to the house from whence they come!

Resp. Hee chargeth mee, to have derided and abused the most valorous Mathematicall Arts; let him shewe mee wherein, and I will answere: of palpable Atheisme he condemnes me, for drinking a cup of lambswool to the health of his Brothers
Booke, cald The Lamb of God & his Enemies: then, what Atheists are they that turne it to waft paper, and goe to the priuy with it? as to no other vses it is convuerted, it lying dead and neuer felling: and againe with the Atheist he spurgals mee, in that I iefted at heauen, calling it the hauen where his deceaeced Brother is arriu’d.

Carnead. Is it a ieft that his brother is arriu’d in heauen? he is in hell then belike.

Conflil. A more likelier piece of Atheisme thou maust urge against him, where he saith in one leafe that one acre of performance is worth twentie of the Land of Promise; as though God had not performd to the Children of Israel the Land of Promise he vowed to them.

Refp. The deepe cut out of my grammer Rules, Astra petit difertus, he hits me with: I am sorry for it I flanderd him so, for he was neuer eloquent; if he bee not aboue the starres, I would hee were. Hee complaines I doo not regard M. Bird, M. Spencer, Mounfieur Bodin. In any thing but in praising him, and therin as Aristotle non vidit verum in spiritualibus, nor Barnard all things; so they may haue theyr eyes dazeled. To a bead-roll of learned men and Lords hee appeales, whether he be an Affe or no, in the forefront of whom he puts M. Thomas Watson, the Poet. A man he was that I dearely lou’d and honor’d,
and for all things hath left few his equalls in England: he it was that, in the company of divers Gentlemen one night at supper at the Nags head in Cheape; first told me of his vanitie, and those Hexameters made of him,

*But o what newes of that good Gabriell Haruey, Knowne to the world for a foole and clapt in the Fleet for a Rimer?*

For the other graue men, they all speak as their fore-man. *His imprisonment in the Fleete, he affirmes, is a lewd supposall* (the Hexameter vearfe before prooues it) as also his writing *the welwillers Epistle* in praisfe of himselfe, before his first foure Letters a yeare ago. The Compositor that set it, swore to mee it came vnder his owne hand to bee printed. *Hee bids the world examine the Preamble before the Supplication to the Diuell, and see if I doo not praise my selfe, and that the tenour of the stile, & identity of the phrase proues it to be mine. He needed not go so far about to sent me out by my stile and my phrase, for if he had euer overlookt it he would haue seene my name to it, and besides, another argument that he neuer read it is (which whosoeuer shal peruse it wil finde) it is altogether in my owne dispraise and disabling, and grieuing at the imperfect printing and misinterpreting of it: let him shewe mee but one tittle or
letter in it tending to any other drift. He vpbraides me by the poore fellow my Fathers putting me to my scribling shifts, and how I am beholding to the Printing-house for my poore shifts of apparaile: My Father put more good meate in poore mens mouthes, than all the ropes and liuing is worth his Father left him, together with his mother and two brothers; and (as another Scholler) he brought me vp at S. Iohns, where (it / is well known) I might haue been Fellow if I had would: and for deriuing my maintenaunce from the Printing-house, so doo both universitites, and whosoever they be that come vp by learning, out of Printed Bookes gathering all they haue; and would not haue furre to put in their gowns, if it, or writing were not. But if hee meane that from writing to the Preffe, I scrape vp my exhibition, let him scrape it out for a lye, till the Impression of this Book, I hauing got nothing by Printing these three yerers. But when I doo play my prizes in Print, Ie be paid for my paines that's once; & not make my selfe a gazing stocke and a publique spectacle to all the world for nothing, as he does, that giues money to be seene and haue his wit lookt vpon, neuer Printing booke yet for whose Impression he hath not either paid or run in debt. Printers (aboue all the rest) haue nothing to thanke him for, in his Praise of
the Ass, he putting in the Press for the arranteft Ass of all, because it is such a meanes to press him to death, and confound him. Danters Press sweares after three Forme a day, since he hath giuen it the press and disgrac’t them it will (how euer others neglect it) never haue done "beating vpon him"; nor hath it acquitted him for calling me Danters gentleman, who is as good at all times as Wolfes right worshipfull Gabriell, or the gentleman he brings in reading a chapter (Colledge fashion at dinner time) against Piers & his proceedings, and the approbation of his Doisterly reincident. Applaud and partake with him who lift, this is my definitie position; which Anaxandrides, a Comick Poet, said of the Aegyptian superstition, Maximam Anguillam, quam Deum putant, comedo; canem quem colunt verbero: / they worship the great Eele for a God, which I eate or disgeft; and the Dog they adore, I spurne or drive out of dores. Hidras heads I should go about to cut off, (as Tacitus faies of them that thinke to cut off all discommodities or inconueniences from the Lawes) if I should undertake to run thorouht all the foolish friuolous reprehensions & cauils he hath in his Booke. I will take no knowledge of his tale of ten egs for a penny, and nine of them rotten; a gormandizing breakfast, he faies, I was at of egs
and butter; which if he can name, where, when, or with whom, I will giue him an annuitie of egsyres. No more will I of his calling me Captaine of the boyes, and Sir Kil-prick; which is a name fitter for his Piggen de wiggen, or gentlewoman: or els, because she is such a hony sweetikin, let her bee Prick-madam, of which name there is a flower; & let him take it to himselfe, and raigne intire Cod-pisse Kinks, and Sir Murdred of placards, durante bene placito, as long as he is able to pleafe, or giue them geare. Like-wisie the Captainship of the boyes I toffe backe to him, he hauing a whole band of them to write in his praife: but if fo he terme me in respect of the minoritie of my beard, he hath a beard like a Crow, with two or three durtie strawes in her mouth, going to build her neaft. See him & see him not I will, about that meazild inuention of the Good-wife my mothers finding her daughter in the ouen, where she would never haue fough her, if she had not been there first her selfe: (a hackny prouerb in mens mouths euer since K. Lud was a little boy, or Belinus, Brennus brother, for the loue hee bare to oyfters built Billini’gate): therafore there is no more to be said to it, but if he could haue told how to haue made a bet/ter lye he would. I wil not present into the Arches, or Commissaries Court, what prinkum prankums Gentlemen (his nere neighbors) haue
whiptred to me of his Sister, and how she is as good a fellow as ever turnd belly to belly; for which she is not to be blam'd, but I rather pitie her, and thinke she cannot doo withall, haung no other dowrie to marie her. Good Lord, how one thing brings on another; had it not bin for his baudy sifter, I should haue forgot to haue answerd for the baudie rymes he threapes vpon me. Are they rimes? and are they baudie? and are they mine? Well, it may be so that it is not so; or if it be, men in their youth (as in their sleep) manie times doo something that might haue been better done, & they do not wel remember.

O Yes. Be it knownen vnto all men by these presents, that whatsoeuer names of Duns, affe, or Dorbell I haue giu'n Gabriell Haruey, or of a kitchin stiffe wrangler, and reading the Lecture of Ram alley, I will still perfeuer and insift in; as also, that I wilbe as good as my word in de- fending any (but abhominable Atheists) that shall write against him, that I wil still maintaine there is in court but one true Diana, & so wil all that are true subiects to her Maiestie; that I think as reverently of London as of any Citie in Europe, though I doo not cal it the "Madam Towne of the Realme," as he hath done, and that I hold no place
better gouvener, how euer in so great a sea of all waters there cannot chuse but be some quick-sands and rockes & shelles; that I neuer so much as in thought detacted from Du Bartas, Buchanan, or anie generall allowed moderne Writer, howere Gnimelfe Hengift here giues out, without / naming time, place, or to whome I did, how I vowd to confute them all; that Maft. Lilly neuer procur'd Greene or mee to write against him, but it was his own first seeking and beginning in The Lamb of God, where he and his Brother (that loues dauncing so wel) scummerd out betwixt them an Epifle to the Readers against all Poets and Writers; & M. Lilly & me by name he be-ruffianizd & be-rafcald, copar'd to Martin, & termd vs piperly make-plies and make-bates, yet bad vs holde our peace & not be so hardie as to answere him, for if we did, he would make a bloodie day in Poules Church-yard, & splinter our pens, til they stradled again as wide as a paire of Compasses. Further be it knowen vnto you, that before this I praisde him (after a fort) in an Epifle in Greenes Menaphon.

Bentiv. But didst thou so?

Resp. O what do you meane to hinder my Proclamation? I did, I did, as unfainedly and sincerely as, in his first butter-fly Pamphlet against

N. III. 13
Greene, he praifd me for that proper yong man, Greene's fellow Writer, whom (in some respects) he wisht well to; as also in his Booke he writ against Greene and mee, he raild upon me vnder the name of Piers Pennileffe, and for a bribe that I should not reply on him praifd me, and reckond me (at the latter end) amongst the famous Schollers of our time, as S. Philip Sidney, M. Watson, M. Spencer, M. Daniell, whom he hartily thankt, & promised to endow with manie complements for so enriching our English Tongue.

Consil. Then, what an Asse is hee to call thee an Asse for praising him, & after thou hadst praifd him (though it was but pretie and so, for a Latine Poet after others) upon a good turn done him (& no inuirie fore-running) to build the founda- tion of a quarrell.

Resp. Further than further bee it knowne (since I had one further before) I neuer abusd Marloe, Greene, Chettle in my life, nor anie of my frends that vnde me like a frend; which both Marloe and Greene (if they were aliue) vnder their hands would testifie, euen as Harry Chettle hath in a short note here.

I Hold it no good manners (M. Nafhe), beeing but an Artificer, to giue D. Haruey the ly, though he haue deferu'd it, by publishing in Print you
haue done mee wrong, which privately I neuer found: yet to conferme by my Art in deed, what his calling forbids me to affirme in word, your booke being readie for the Press, Ile square & set it out in Pages, that shall page and lackey his infamie after him (at leaft) while he liues if no longer.

Your old Compositor,

Henry Chettle.

Impo. Yes, Greene he conuinces thee to haue abused, in that thy defence of him is a more biting commendation than his reprooфе.

Propond. It is fo heretickall a falsifier, a man had not need talke with him without a Bible in the roome; for it may be he hath some care of his oath, if it be not in a matter of reconciliation, or repaying of money, as to Dexters man: but his ipse dixit, his report otherwise, is nothing fo currant as beggers about the Courts remoue. Nere tell me of this or that he fayes I spake or did, except he particularize and stake downe the verie words, and, catching them by the throate like a theefe, say, / these are they that did the deed, I arreft you, and I charge you all, gentle Readers, to aid me. What truly might be spoked of Greene, I publisht, neither discommending him, nor too much flattering him (for I was nothing bound to him); whereas it maye be alleadgd
against Gabriel, as it was against Paulus Iouius, Quæ verissime scribere potuit noluit, & quæ voluit non potuit: those things which hee might haue related truely hee would not, and those which he would hee could not, for want of good intelligence. How he hath handled Greene and Marloe, since their deaths, those that read his Bookes may iudge: and where, like a iakes barreller and a Gorbolone, he girds me with imitating of Greene, let him vnderstand, I more scorne it, than to haue so soule a iakes for my groaning stoole as hys mouth; & none that euer had but one eye, with a pearle in it, but could discern the difference twixt him & me; while he liu'd (as some Stationers can witnes with me) hee subscribing to me in anie thing but plotting Plaies, wherein he was his crafts master. Did I euer write of Conycatching? stufft my file with hearbs & stones? or apprentisd my selfe to running of the letter? If not, how then doo I imitate him? A hang-by of his (one Valentine Bird, that writ againft Greene) imitated me, & would embezill out of my Piers Pennileffe fiexe lines at a clap, and vse them for his owne. Nay, he himselfe hath purloyned something from mee, and mended his hand in confuting by fifteen parts, by following my presidents. There is two or three mouth fulls of my Oo yes yet behinde, which, after I
TO SAFFRON-WALDEN.

haue drawne out at length, you shall feeme (like a Crier, that when he hath done kire-elofoning it, puts of his cap, and cries God faue the Queene, / & so steps into the next ale-houfe) steale out of your companie before you bee aware, and hide my felfe in a Clofet, no bigger than would holde a Church Bible, till the beginning of Candlemas Terme, and then, if you come into Poules Church-yard, you shall meete mee.

Oo yes, be it knowne, I can ryme as wel as the Doctor, for a fample whereof, in ftead of his

*Noddy Nash, whom euerie fwash, and his occa-

fionall admonitionatiue Sonnet, his Apostrophe Son-
ett, and tynie titmouse Lenuoy, like a welt at
the edge of a garment, his goggle-eyde Sonnet
of Gorgon, and the wonderfull yeare, and another
Lenuoy, for the chape of it, his Stanza declaratiue,
Writers poft-script in meeter, his knitting vp Cloafe,
and a third Lenuoy, like a fart after a good ftoole;
In ftead of all thefe (I fay) here is the tuftt or
labell of a rime or two, the trick or habit of
which I got by looking on a red nose Ballet-
maker that reforted to our Printing-houfe. They
are to the tune of Labore Dolore, or the Parla-
ment tune of a pot of ale and nutmegs and
ginger, or Eldertons ancient note of meeting the
diuell in coniure house lane. If you hit it right,
it will go maruellousfly fweetly:
HAUE WITH YOU

Gabriel Harvey, James duckling,
hey noddie, noddie, noddie:
Is made a gosling and a suckling,
hey noddie, noddie, noddie.

Or that's not it, I haue a better.

Dilla, my Doctor deare,
sing dilla, dilla, dilla:
Nafhe hath spoyled thee cleare
with his quilla, quilla, quilla.

What more haue I in my Proclamation to yalp out? No more but this, that in both my bookes I haue obieeted some particular vice more against him than pumps and pantofles, which those that haue not faith inough to beleue, may toote & superuize when they haue any literall idle ley-fure. The Tragedie of wrath, or Priscianus vapulans, promisef in the epilogue Sonnet of my Foure Letters, (three or foure words wherof, as Awayte, and paint, and tread no common path, he mumbles and chewes in his mouth like a peece of Allom, or the ftone of a horfe plum, to sucke off all the meate of it) let him take this for it, whereby I am out of his debt, if not ouer-plus. And where he terrefies mee with insulting hee was Tom Bur-wels the Fencers Scholler, and that he will squeueze and mazer me whensoever he met me, why did hee not when hee met me at Cambridge, we lying
backe to backe in the same Inne, and but two or three square trenchours of a wainscot dore betwixt vs? By our reconciliation he cannot excuse it, since the law-day was out, and the feude open againe by his breach of truce, and my defiance to him in an Epistle to the Reader in Christ's tears. But let him henceforth prouide him of two or three sturdie Plow men (such as his swines fac't blue-coate was) when I legerd by him in the Dolphin, for otherwise not all the fence he learnt of Tom Burwell shall keepe mee from cramming a turd in his iawes (and no other bloud will I draw of him): I haue bespoken a boy and a napkin already to carry it in. Laft of all, there is nothing I haue bragd of my writing in all humors, no not so much as of his fleshly humours, but shall be anuilde for true steele on his standish, I making an indenture twixt God and my/soule, to confume my bodie as slender as a stilt or a broome-staffe; and my braine as poore and compendius as the pummell of a scotch faddle, or pan of a Tobacco pipe, but as the Elephant and the Rinoceros neuer fight but about the best pastures, so will I winne from him his best Patrons, and drive him to confesse himselfe a Conundrum, who now thinks he hath learning enough to prooue the saluation of Lucifer; Apologize it for him as many
Chutes, Barnejes, or vile friggers, or Fregeuiles, as there will.

Bentiv. Thou promisedst to haue a dead lift at that Fregeuile.

Resp. I, here I am come to his verses, but let mee take them in order as they lie; Thorius is first, with a Letter and Sonnet, and Post-script of Chutes.

Carnead. More Post-scripts and preambles: hath he (as with his Thrafonifme) infested them all with his methode of Lenuoyes, Post-scripts and Preambles.

Respond. From Master Thorius I haue a letter vnder his owne hand, which he sent mee to be printed, ytterly disclaiming the wrong which the Doctour (vnder his name) hath thrust out against mee. This is the counterpaine of it.

To my very good friend M. Nashe.

Master Nashe: I pray you to let my carriage towards you alwaies, beget but thus much in your opinion, that I would never have beene led with so much indifcretion as to raile against any man vnprovoked, or to offer him wrong that never offended mee. Truely, upon the sight of five or six sheets of Doctor Harueyes Booke, I wrote certaine verses in his commendation; but that Sonnet which in his booke is subscribed with my name, is not mine, and I
geffe at the mistaking of it. Indeed the Stanzaes are, though altered to your disgrace in some places. To use many words were vaine, and to ende writing and leave you unsatisfied, were to write to no end, and to leave my selfe discontented. But if you consider how I was as much offended with the uniuest vaineglorious Print as your selfe, wee shall both rest contented. Little did I think the booke should have had so famous a Title, or so many Prefaces, or so many Letters and Preambles; amongst which some of mine, blushing to looke vppon so contemptible a person they were directed too, could not but be exceedingely ashamed to bee presented to the eyes of a whole world. I could mislike other things, but I will leave them as trifles. Farewell.

Yours to use,

I. Thorius.

Chute, / that was the bawlingest of them all, & that bobd me with nothing but Rhenish furie, Stilliard clyme, oyster whore phrase, claret spirit, and ale-house passions, with talking so much of drinke, within a yere and a halfe after died of the dropsie, as diuers Printers that were at his buriall certefide mee. Beeing dead, I would not haue requ'd him, but that the Doctor (whose patron he was) is alieue to answere for him. Mounfieur Fregufius, or Mounfieur Fregevile Gautius, that
prating weazell fac’d vermin, is one of the Pipers in this confort, and he is at it with his Apologie of the thrice learned and thrice eloquent Doctour Haruey, befooles and befots mee in euerie line, pleads the Doctors innocence, and the lawfulness of his pro-
ceedings, praieth his moderate stile, saies he is forie he is so vniustly pusht at, and, being pusht at, glad he hath so acquitted him, and that his Answere is reasonable and eloquent.

I am forie I haue no more roome to reaon the matter with him; for if I had, I did not doubt but to make him a fugitiue out of England as well as he is out of his owne Countrey: & in this great dearth in England we haue no reaon but to make him a Fugitiue or banisht him, since he is the rauenousteft flouen that euer lapt porredge; and out of two Noblemens houses he had his Mittimus of ye may be gone, for he was such a peruerse Ramistical heretike, a busie reprouer of the principles of all Arts, and sower of feditious Paradoxes amongft kitchen boyes.

My clue is spun, the Tearme is at an end, wherefore here I wil end and make Vacation: but if you wil haue a word or two of Doctour Perne and Master Lilly, in stead of one of Gabriels Apostrophe Sonnets or Lenuayes / by Struthio Belliuecento de Compaffo Callipero, and the Contents of it, I protest and adiure, you shall.
Against Doctor Perne our Poditheck, or Tolmach, hath in his booke twilted and sticht in a whole penny-worth of paper, which his Gossipship, that had the naming of the child, dubs the Encomium of the Foxe. In it he endorseth him the puling Preacher of Pax vobis & humilitie, (to both of which Gabriell alwaies was an enemie, even as Doctor Perne was to his loue-lockes & his great ruffes and pantofles) the triangle turne-coate, (I wold he had anie coat to turne but that he weares:) and for triangles, one angle or corner he wilbe glad of to hide him in after this Booke is out, & brickil & ouen vp his flinking breath, (which smells like the greafie snafe of a candle) that I maye not come within eleuen-teene score nose length of it. He brings in his coffin to speake: what a woodden ieft is that? An apostata, an hipocryte, a Machauill, a cousner, a iugler, aletcher hee makes him, and saies he kept a Cubbe at Peterhouse; that his hospitalitie was like Ember wecke or good Friday: & if a man shoulde haue writ against Sergius, that was the first fetter vp of Mahomet, he could not haue parbraked more vilenes, than he hath done against him. Vincit qui patitur he faith (or a great Counsellor that giues that Pofie) can vnrip the whole packet of his knauerie, making him a broker to his scutcherie. The whole Quire thankes you hartily. Doctor
Perne is cast vp in lead, and cannot arise to plead for himselfe: wherefore this (as duty to those some way bindes mee that were somewhat bound to him) I wil commit to inke & paper in his behalfe. Few men liu’d better, though, like David or Peter, he had his falls, yet the Vniuersitie had not a more carefull Father this 100 yere, and if no regard but that a chiefe Father of our Commonwealth lou’d him, (in whose house he died) hee might haue spar’d and forborne him.

His hospitalitie was as great as hath bin kept before, or euer since, vpon the place he had, and for his wit & learning, they that mislike want the like wit and learning, or else they would haue more judgement to discerne of it. For Master Lillie (who is halues with me in this indignitie that is offred) I will not take the tale out of his mouth, for he is better able to defend himselfe than I am able to say he is able to defend himselfe, and in as much time as hee spendes in taking Tobacco one weeke, he can compile that which would make Gabriell repent himselfe all his life after. With a blacke fant he meanes shortly to bee at his chamber window, for calling him the Fiddlestickes of Oxford. In that he twatleth, it had bin better to haue confuted Martin by Reverend Cooper than such leuitie; tell mee why was hee not then confuted by Reverend Cooper, or made
to hold his peace, till Master Lillie, and some others, with their pens drew vpon him? A day after the faire when he is hangd Haruey takes him in hand, but if he had beene alieue now, even as he writ more worke for the Cooper, so would he haue writte Harueys whoope diddle, or the non-futing, or uncafting of the animadvertifer. I haue a laughing hickocke to heare him faye, hee was once suspected for Martin, when there is nere a Pursiant in England, in the pulling on his boots, euuer thought of him or imputed to him so much wit. The bastingest thinges which I can picke out, wherein he hath festered Martin, or defended bishops, are these: For a polished tyle few goe beyond Cartwright; his rayling at mee, for speaking against Beza, the grand Champion against Bishops; his malicious defamation of Doctour Perne; where, after hee hath polluted him with all the scandale hee could, hee saies, The clergie neuer wanted excellent fortune-wrights, and he was one of the cheefe: as though the Church of England were vpheld and Aflaffed by corruption, Machaerelisme, apostatisme, hipocryfie and treacherie: in all these hee, making him notorious in the higheft kinde, dooth giue out, that he was one of the Churches cheife fortune-wrights: and besides (to mend the matter) he asks, What Bishop or Politician in England was so great a Temporifer as hee? I hope
there be some Bishops within the compass of the two Metropolitaine Seas, that can fish out a shameful meaning out of this word Temporiser, and doo disdaine their high calling should be so Gnathonically compar'd, for such is a Temporiser; and with their profession it stands to bee no state Politicians, but onely to meddle with the state of heauen. Then he hath a tale out of Pontane against Bishops, for their riding upon horses, & not asse as Christ did: aswel he might refrain them to ride vpon mares, as John Bale faith our English Bishops wer limitted too heretofore. Such another tale of a Horse hee hath of Gelo, a Tyrant of Sicily, whom he termes the politique Tyrant, for bringing in his great horse, instead of a harper, into his Banquetting-house; to dung and stale amongst his guests. It is a stale stinking Apotheg; but Bene olet hostis interfectus (as Vitellius faid); the sweete sauer of an enemie slaine takes away the smell of it.

More battring engins I had in a readines prepared to shake his walles, which I keepe backe till the next Tearme, meaning to insert them in my Four Letters Confuted, which then is to be renewed and reprinted againe.

So be your leave God be with you, I was bold to call in, Spectatores. The faults escaped in the Printing I wish may likewise escape you in reading.
In the Epistle Dedicatory correct Willington, and put in Williamson: in the midst of the Booke vide make vidi: about the latter end Stellaified Stellaified, and Sunius Surius: with as many other words, or letters to much, or too-wanting, as ye will.

The Paradoxe of the Asse, M. Lilly hath wrought upon; as also to him I turne over the Doctors Apothecarie tearmes he hath vfed throughout, & more especially in his last Epistle of notable Contents.

Herewith the Court breaks up and goes to dinner, all generally concluding with Traian; The Gods never suffer anie to be ouer-come in battail, but those that are enemies to peace.

Tu mihi criminis
Author.

Finis.
x.
THE
TERRORS OF THE NIGHT.
1594.
NOTE.

For the exemplar of 'The Terrors of the Night' I am indebted to the Bodleian.—G.
THE
Terrors of the night,
Or
A Discourse of Apparitions.

Post Tenebras Dies.

Tho: Nashe.

London,
Printed by John Danter for William Jones, and are to be sold
at the signe of the Gunne, nere Holburne Conduit.
1594.
TO THE NEW KIND-
led cleare Lampe of Virginitie, and
the excellent adored high Wonder of sharpe Wit
and sweete Beautie, Mistres Elizabeth Carey;
sole Daughter and Heire to the thrice noble and re-
owned Sir George Carey, Knight
Marshall, &c.

Are adorned Mistris, whom al that know
admire, and not malice it selfe but doth
honor. True Stemme of Nobilitie, out-
favourishing your sexe or your age; pure faint-like
picture of Sobrietie and Modeftie, sacred and im-
maculate virgin Starre, cleare (if anie liuing) from
the originall sin of thought: giue me leaue (though
contemptible and abieft) once more to sacrifise my
worthles wit to your glorie. Manie feruent vowes
and protestations of obseruance, your bountifull
gracious deserts towards mee, haue entrancedly
extracted, which yet remain in the o're vnwrought
and vntride. As touching this short glofe or an-
notation on the foolish Terrors of the Night, you
partly are acquainted, from whose motiue imposition
it first proceeded, as also what strange sodaine cause necessarily produced that motion. A long time since hath it bine suppressed by mee; vntill the vrgent importunitie of a kinde frend of mine (to whom I was fundrie waies beholding) /wrested a Coppie from me. That Coppie progresed from one scruueners fhop to another, & at length grew fo common, that it was readie to bee hung out for one of their signes, like a paire of indentures. Whereupon I thought it as good for mee to reape the frute of my owne labours, as to let some vnskilfull pen-man or Nouerint-maker earstch his ruffe & new spade his beard with the benefite he made of them. Accept of them, exquisite Miftiris, as the best testimonie I haue yet to expres the dutie that I owe. A little more leasure and prosperitie, will beget better labors; wherein I will enioyne my spirit to be a peremptorie combattant for your praisies, against all vulgar deepe flattred mediocrifie, and pale penurious beautie, which giues dull Painters store of gold to folder vp their leane dints of deformity. Against your perfections no tung can except. Miraculous is your wit; and fo is acknowledged by the wittieft Poets of our age, who haue vowed to enthrine you as their second Delia. Temperance her selfe hath not temperater behauiour than you; religious Pietie hath no humble hand-maide that she more delights in. A
worthy Daughter are you of so worthie a Mother; borrowing (as another Phæbe, from her bright Sunne-like resplendaunce) the orient beames of your radiaunce. Into the Muses societie her selfe she hath lately adopted, & purchasft divine Petrarch another monument in England. Euer honored may she be of the royallest breed of wits, whose purse is so open to her poore beadsmens distresses. Well may I say it, because I haue tride it, never liu’d a more magnificent Ladie of her degree on this earth. A number of men there bee, / who pursuuing the high way to the Indies, haue perisht in lingring expectation before they could get thether; but a neerer Cut haue I found in her extraordinarie liberalitie and bountie: and to a companie of my malcontent companions will discover if it please them, how to be gainfull and gain-coping navigators if they will insist in my directions. Now I must tie my selfe to the Printers paper limits, and knit vp much thankfulness in few words. Deare Mistris, perswade your selfe, that no frowning misfortune or anye accident whatsoeuer, shall diuorce me from your reuerence. No more I craue in requitall, but that you would put me in the checke-roule of your remembrance, and not salute me as a stranger.

*Your vertues immoueable Votarie:*

Tho: Nashe.
To Mafter or Goodman Reader, generally dispersed East or West.

*Entlemen (according to the laudable custome)*

I am to court you with a few premisses considered: but a number of you there bee, who consider neither premisses nor conclusion, but piteouslie torment Title Pages on euerie poaft: neuer reading farther of anie Booke, than Imprinted by Simeon such a signe, and yet with your dudgen judgement will desperatlie presume to run vp to the hard hilts through the whole bulke of it. Martin Momus, and splaie footed Zoylus that in the eight and fixt age of Poetrie, and first yere of the reigne of Tarltons toies kept a foule fir in Poules Church-yard, are now reviu'd againe: and like wanton Whelpes that haue wormes in their tungs, flauer and betouse euerie paper they meete withall. Yea, if they chance but on a moate or a wind bladder, they neuer haue done with it, till they haue cleane bandied and toft it out of fight. For my part, I wish that I may be both out of their fight and out
of their minde too: and if their winy wits must needs be working, that they would rather be Tailors to make, than botchers or coblers to amend or to marre. Come, come, I know their dull tricks well enough, you shal haue them lie in child-bed one and thirtie weeks and eight daies of three bad lines and a halfe, & afterward spend a whole twelve month in spunging & sprucing them, honest thriftie Peter Littleton discharging their commons all the while: but such poore fellowes as I, that cannot put out money to be paid againe whien we come from Constantinople, either must haue our work dispatcht by the weeks end, or els we may go beg: and yet I will not beg of them, neither go to the world neuer so hard, no not so much as a good word: but if in word or deed I hear that they wrong me, Ile meet them right if I can. And so I leaue them to stop mustard pots with my leaves if they will, or to their owne will whatsoeuer.

THOMAS NASH.
The Terrors of the Night.

or

A Discourse of Apparitions.

Little to beguile time idly discontented, and satisfy some of my solitary friends here in the Countrey, I have hastily under-tooke to write of the wearie fancies of the Night, wherein if I weary none with my weak fancies, I will hereafter lean harder on my penne and fetch the petegree of my praisè, from the utmost of paines.

As touching the terrors of the night, they are as many as our sinnes. The Night is the Diuells Blacke booke, wherein hee recordeth all our transgressions. Euen as when a condemned man is put into a darke dungeon, secluded from all comfort of light or companie, he doth nothing but despairfully call to minde his gracelesse former / life, and
the brutish outrages and misdemeanours that have thrown him into that desolate horror: so when Night in her rustie dungeon hath imprisoned our eye-fight, and that we are shut seperately in our chambers from resort, the diuell keepeth his audit in our sin-guilty consciences, no sense but surrenders to our memorie a true bill of parcels of his detestable impieties. The table of our hart is turned to an index of iniquities, and all our thoughts are nothing but texts to condemne vs.

The rest we take in our beds is such another kinde of rest, as the wearie traveller taketh in the coole soft grass in summer; who thinketh there to lye at ease, and refresh his tyred limmes, layeth his fainting head vnawares on a loathsome nest of snakes.

Well haue the Poets tearmd night the nurse of cares, the mother of despaire, the daughter of hell.

Some Diuines haue had this conceipt, that God would haue made all day and no night, if it had not been to put vs in minde, there is Hell as well as a Heauen.

Such is the peace of the subiects, as is the peace of the Prince vnder whom they are gouerned. As God is intitled the Father of light, so is the diuell surnamed the Prince of darknesse, which is the night. The only peace of minde that the diuell hath is despaire, wherefore wee that liue
in his nightly kingdome of darknes, must needs taste some disquiet.

The Rauen and the Doue that were sent out of Noes Arke, to discouer the worlde after the generall Deluge, may well be an allegorie of the day and the night. The day is our good Angell the Doue, that returneth to our eyes with an Oliue branch of peace in his mouth (presenting quiet and securitie to our distracted soules and consciences); the night is that ill angel the Rauen, which neuer commeth back to bring anie good tidings of tranquilitie: a continuall messenger hee is of dole and misfortune. The greatest curse almost that in the scripture is threatened, is, that the rauens shal picke out their eies in the valley of death. This cursed rauen the night, pecks out mens eyes in the valley of death. It hindreth them from looking to heauen for succor, where their Redeemer dwelleth: wherefore no doubt it is a time most fatall and unhallowed. This being proved, that the diuell is a speciall predominant Planet of the night, and that our creator for our punishment hath allotted it him as his peculiar fegniorie and kingdome, from his inueterate enuie, I will amplifie the vgly terrous of the night. The names importing his mallice, which the scripture is plentiful of, I wil here omit; leaft some men shuld think I went about to conjure. Sufficeth
vs to haue this heedfull knowledge of him, that hee is an auncient male content, and seeketh to make anie one desperat like himselfe. Like a cunning fowler to this end he spreadeth his nets of temptation in the darke, that men might not fee to auoyd them. As the Poet faith.

Quae nimis apparent retia vitat auis.
Too open nets euen simple birds doo fhun.

Therefore in another place (which it cannot be but the diuell hath read) he counsaileth thus.

Noñem / peccatis & fraudibus obiice nubem.
By night time finne, and cloake thy fraud with clouds.

When hath the diuell commonly first appeared vnto anie man but in the night?

In the time of infidelitie, when spirits were so familiar with men that they cald them Dii Penates, their houshold Gods or their Lares, they neuer sacrificied vnto them till Sunne-setting. The Robbin-good-fellowes, Elfes, Fairies, Hobgoblins of our latter age, which idolatrous former daies and the fantaficall world of Greece ycleaped Fawnes, Satyres, Dryades, & Hamadryades, did most of their merry prankes in the Night. Then ground they malt, and had hempen shirts for their labours, daunft in rounds in greene meadowes, pincht maids in their sleepe that swept not their
houses clean, and led poor Travellers out of their way notoriously.

It is not to be gain-said, but the diuell can transforme himself into an angell of light, appeare in the day as well as in the night, but not in this subtile world of Christianity so usual as before. If he doo, it is when mens mindes are extraordinarily throwne downe with discontent, or inly terrified with some horrible concealed murder, or other hainous crime close smothered in secret. In the day he may smoothly in some mild shape insinuat, but in the night he takes upon him like a tyrant. There is no theefe that is halfe so hardie in the day, as in the night, no more is the diuell. A generall principle it is, hee that doth ill hateth the light.

This Macheuillian tricke hath hee in him worth the noting, that those whom he dare not united or together encounter, / disjoin'd and diuided, hee will one by one affaile in their sleepe. And even as Ruptures and crampes doo then most torment a man when the bodie with any other disease is distemperd, so the Diuell when with any other sickenes or malladie the faculties of our reason are enfeebled and distemperd, will be most busie to disturbe vs and torment vs.

In the quiet silence of the night he will be sure to surprize vs, when he vnfallibly knowes we shall
be vnarmed to refift, and that there will be full audience granted him to vndermine or perfwade what he lifts. All that euer he can fcare vs with, are but Seleucus ayrie Caftles, terrible bug-beare brags, and nought els, which with the leaft thought of faith are quite vanished and put to flight. Neither; in his owne nature dare he come nere vs, but in the name of fin, and as Gods executioner. Thofe that catch birds imitate their voyces, fo will hee imitate the voyces of Gods vengeance, to bring vs like birds into the net of eternall damnation.

Children, fooles, ficke-men or mad-men hee is moft familiar with (for he still delights to worke vpon the aduantage) and to them he boldly reuealeth, the whole aſtonifhing treaurie of his wonders.

It will be demaunded why in the likenes of ones father or mother, or kinsfolks, he oftentime presents himſelfe vnto vs?

No other reaſon can bee giuen of it but this, that in thofe shapes which hee ſuppoſeth moſt familliar vnto vs, and that wee are inclined to with a naturall kind of loue, we will sooner harken to him than otherwiſe.

Should he not disguife himſelfe in ſuch ſubtil formes of afſeſtion, we would flie from him as a ſerpent, and eschew him with that hatred he ought to be eschewd. If anie afke him why he is more
conuerfant & bujie in church-yards and places where men are buried, than in anie other places? It is to make vs beleeue that the bodies & soules of the departed reft entirely in his possession, and the peculiar power of death is resigned to his disposition. A rich man delights in nothing so much as to be vnceffantly raking in his treasurie, to bee turning ouer hys rustie gold euerie houre: the boanes of the dead, the diuell counts his chiefe treasurie, and therfore is he continually raking amongst them; and the rather he doth it, that the liuing which heare it should bee more vnwilling to die, insomuch as after death their boanes should take no reft.

It was said of Cataline, *Vultum gestauit in manibus*, with the turning of a hand he could turne and alter his countenance. Farre more nimble and sodaine is the Diuell in shifting his habit, his forme he can change, and cogge as quicke as thought.

What do we talke of one diuell? There is not a roome in anie mans house, but is pestred and close packed with a campe royall of diuels. *Chriſtome* faith, the aire and earth are three parts inhabited with spirits. Hereunto the Philofopher alluded, when hee said, Nature made no voydnes in the whole vniuersfall: for no place (bee it no bigger than a pock hole in a mans face) but is close

*N. 111.*
thronged with them. Infinite millions of them will hang swarming about a worm-eaten nose.

Don / Lucifer himselfe their grand Capitano, asketh no better throne than a bleare eye to set vp his state in. Upon a haire they will sit like a nit, and ouer-dredge a bald pate like a white scurfffe. The wrinkles in old witches visages, they eate out to entrench themselves in.

If in one man a whole legion of diuells haue bin billeted, how manie hundred thousand legions retaine to a Tearme at London? If I said but to a Tauerne, it were an infinite thing. In Westminister Hall a man can scarce breath for them: for in every corner they houer as thick as moates in the sunne.

The Druides that dwelt in the Ile of Man, which are famous for great conjurers, are reported to haue bene lousie with familiars. Had they but put their finger and their thumbe into their neck, they could haue pluckt out a whole neaft of them.

There be them that thinke euery sparke in a flame is a spirit, and that the wormes which at sea eate through a ship, are so also: which may verie well bee; for haue not you seene one sparke of fire burne a whole towne, & a man with a sparke of lightning made blinde, or kild outright. It is impossible the gunnes should goe off as
they doo, if there were not a spirit either in the fier, or in the powder.

Now for wormes: what makes a dog run mad, but a worme in his tung? and what should that worme bee, but a spirit? Is there anie reason, such small vermine as they are, should devoure such a vaft thing as a shipp, or haue the teeth to gnaw through yron and wood? No, no, they are spirits, or els it were incredible.

*Tullius / Hofillus* who tooke vp on him to coniure vp Ioue by *Numa Pompillius* bookes, had no fenfe to quake & tremble at the wagging and shaking of euery leafe, but that he thought all leaues are full of wormes, and those wormes are wicked spirits.

If the bubbels in streams were wel searcht, I am perfwaved they would be found to be little better. Hence it comes that mares (as *Columella* reporteth) looking their formes in the water, run mad. A flea is but a little beaft, yet if she were not possfet with a spirit, she could never leape and skip fo as she doth. *Froifard* faith, the Earle of *Fois* had a familiar that presented it gefe vnto him in the likenes of two rufhes fighting one with another. Not fo much as *Tewksburie* mustard but hath a spirit in it or els it would neuer bite fo. Haue wee not read of a number of men that haue ordinarily carried a familiar or a spirite in a ring
in stead of a sparke of a diamond?  Why I tell ye we cannot break a crum of bread so little, as one of them will be if they lift.

From this generall discourse of spirits, let vs digresse, & talke another while of their separate natures and properties.

The spirits of the fire which are the purest and perfectest, are merry, pleasant, and well inclined to wit, but neuertheles gyddie, and vnconstant.

Those whome they possesse, they cause to excell in what euer they vndertake.  Or Poets or boone companions they are out of question.

Socrates Genius was one of this stampe, and the Doue wherewith the Turks hold Mahomet their Prophet to bee inspired.  What their names are, and vnder whome they are gouerned, the Discoverie of witchcraft hath amplified at large, wherefore I am exempted from that labour.  But of the diuinesst quintessence of mettals and of wines are many of these spirits extracted.  It is almost impossible for any to bee encumbred with ill spirits, who is continually conversant in the excellent restorative distillations of wit and of Alcumie.  Those that rauenously englut themselues with grosse meates, and respect not the quality but the quantity of what they eate, haue no affinitie with these spirits of the fire.

A man that will entertaine them must not
pollute his bodie with any grosse carnall copulation or inordinate beastly desires, but loue pure beauty, pure vertue, and not haue his affections linsey wolsey, intermingled with luft, and things worthy of liking.

As for example if hee loue good Poets hee muft not countenance Ballet-makers, if he haue learned Phisitions he muft not fauor horfe-leaches and mountebanks: for a bad spirit and a good can neuer endure to dwell together.

Those spirits of the fire, howeuer I terme them comparatiuely good in respect of a number of bad, yet are they not simply well inclinde, for they bee by nature ambitious, haughty and proud, nor do they loue vertue for it felfe any whit, but because they would ouerquell and outftrip others, with the vaine glorious oftentation of it. A humor of monarchizing and nothing els it is, which makes them affect rare quallified studies. Many Atheifts are with these spirits inhabited.

To come to the spirits of the water, the earth, & the ayre, they are dull flegmaticke drones, things that haue much mallice without anie great might. Drunkards, mizers, and women they vſually retain too. Water (you all know) breedeth a medley kinde of licor called beere; with these watrie spirits they were poſſeſſed, that firſt inuented the art of bruing. A quagmire consisting
of mud and sand, sendeth forth the like pudly mixture.

All rheumes, poses, Sciaticaes, dropfies, and gouts, are diseases of their flegmaticke engendring. Sea-faring men of what fort so ever, are chiefe entertainers of those spirits. Greedy vintners likewise giue hospitallitie to a number of them; who hauing read no more scripture, than that myracle of Christs turning water into wine in Chanaan, thinke to doo a farre stranger miracle than euer he did, by turning wine into water.

Ale houses and cookes hadie pavilions, by wattrie spirits are principally upheld.

The spirits of the earth are they which crie, all bread and no drinke, that loue gold and a buttond cap aboue heauen. The woorth in nought they respect, but the weight, good wits they naturally hate; insomuch as the element of fire their progenitor, is a waist-good & a consumer. If with their earth-plowing snowtes they can turne vp a pearle out of a dunghill, it is all they desire. Witches haue manie of these spirits, and kill kyne wyth them. The giants and chiefetaines of those spirites, are powrful sometimes to bring men to their ends, but not a iot of good can they doo for their liues.

Souldiers with these terrestrial spirits participate part / of their essence, for nothing but yron and
OF THE NIGHT.

golde (which are earths excrements) they delight in. Befides, in another kinde they may be saied to participate with them, insomuch as they confirme them in their furie, & congeale their mindes with a bloodie resolution. Spirites of the earth they were that entred into the heard of fwyne in the Gofpel. There is no citie merchant, or country purchafer, but is haunted with a whole hofte of these spirits of the earth. The Indies is their Metropolitane realme of abode.

As for the spirites of the aire, which haue no other visible bodies or form, but such as by the vnconstant glimmering of our eies is begotten; they are in truth all show and no substance, deluders of our imagination, & nought els. Carpet knights, politique statesmen, women & childre they moft conuers with. Carpet knights they inspire with a humor of setting big lookes on it, being the basest cowards vnder heauen, couering an apes hart with a lions cafe, and making false alarums when they mean nothing but a may-game. Politique statesmen they priuily incite, to bleare the worlds eyes with clowdes of common wealth pretences, to broach any enmitie or ambitious humor of their owne, vnder a title of their cuntries preferuation. To make it faire or fowle when they lift to procure popularity, or induce a preamble to some mightie peece of prowling, to flir
vp tempefts round about, & replenisht heaven with prodigies and wonders, the more to ratifie their avaritious religion. Women they under-hand instruct to pownce and boulfter out theyr brawn-falne deformities, to new perboile with painting their rake-leane withered visages, to set vp flaxe shops on their forheads, when all their owne haire is dead and rotten, to sticke their gums round with Comfets, when they haue not a tooth left in their heads to help them to chide withall.

Children they seduce with garish obieets and toyish babies, abusing them many yeares with flight vanities. So that you see all their whole influence is but thin ouer cast vapours, flying clouds dispersed with the least winde of wit or understanding.

None of these spirits of the ayre or the fire haue so much predominance in the night as the spirits of the earth and the water; for they feeding on foggie-braind melancholly, engender thereof many uncouth terrible monsters. This much obserue by the way, that the grossest part of our blood is the melancholy humor, which in the spleene congealed whose office is to disperse it, with his thicke steaming fennie vapours casteth a mist ouer the spirit, and cleane bemasketh the phantastie.

And euen as slime and durt in a standing puddle, engender toads and frogs, and many other
vnsightly creatures, so this slimie melancholy humor still still thickning as it stands still, engendreth many mishapen obiects in our imaginations. Sundry times wee behold whole Armies of men skirmishing in the Ayre, Dragons, wilde beasts, bloody streamers, blazing Comets, fire strakes, with other apparitions innumerable: whence haue all these their conglomerate matter but from fuming meteors that arise from the earth, so from the fuming melancholly of our spleene mounteth that hot matter into the higher Region of the braine, whereof manie fearfull visions are framed. Our reason euen like drunken fumes it displaceth and intoxicates, & yeelds vp our intelleciuе apprehension, to be mocked and troden vnder foote, by euery false obiect or counterfet noyse that comes neere it. Heerein specially consisisteth our senses defect and abuse; that those organicall parts which to the minde are ordained embassadours, doo not their message as they ought, but by some misdiet or misgovernement being distempered, faile in their report, and deliuer vp nothing but lyes and fables.

Such is our braine oppressed with Melancholly, as is a clocke tyed downe with two heauie weights or plummets; which as it cannot chufe but monſtrously goe a square, or not goe at all: so muſt our braines of necessitie be either monſtrously distraeted, or vtterly destroyed thereby.
Lightly this extreamitie of Melancholye neuer commeth, but before some notable sicknesse; it faring with our braynes as with Bees, who, as they exceedingly toyle and turmoile before a storme or change of weather, so doo they beate and toyle, and are infinitelie confused before sicknes.

Of the effects of melancholy I need not dilate, or discourse how many encumbred with it, haue thought thefelves birdes and beasts, with feathers, and hornes, and hydes; others, that if they should make water they should drowne all the world; others, that they can neuer bleed inough.

Phisitians in their circuit euerie day meet with far more ridiculous experience. Onely it shall suffice a little by the way to handle one speciall effect of it, which is dreames.

A dreame is nothing els but a bubling f cúm or froath of the fancie, which the day hath left undigefted; or an after feaft made of the fragments of idle imaginations.

How manie forts there be of them no man can rightly set downe, since it scarce hath been heard, there were euer two men that dreamed alike. Diuers have written diuerfly of their caufes, but the beft reaſon among them all that I could euer picke out, was this, that as an arrow which is shot out of a bow, is fet forth manie times with fuch force, that it flyeth farre beyond the marke
wherat it was aymed: so our thoughts intently fixt all the day time upon a marke wee are to hit, are now and then ouer drawne with such force, that they flye beyonde the marke of the day into the confines of the night. There is no man put to any torment, but quaketh & trembleth a great while after the executioner hath withdrawne his hand from him. In the daye time wee torment our thoughts and imaginations with sundry cares and deuices; all the night time they quake and tremble after the terror of their late suffering, and still continue thinking of the perplexities they haue endured. To nothing more aptly can I compare the working of our braines after we haue vnyoakt and gone to bed, than to the glimmering and dazeling of a mans eyes when hee comes newly out of the bright Sunne, into the darke shadow.

Euen as ones eyes glimmer and dazle when they are withdrawne out of the light into darknesse: so are our thoughts / troubled & vexed when they are retyred from labor to eafe, and from skirmishing to surgerie.

You must giue a wounded man leave to grone while he is in dressing: Dreaming is no other than groaning, while sleepe our surgeon hath vs in cure.

He that dreams merily is like a boy new breecht,
who leapes and daunceth for ioy his pain is paft: but long that ioy stayes not with him, for presently after his master the day seeing him so iocund and pleasant, comes and dooes as much for him againe, whereby his hell is renued.

No such figure of the first Chaos whereout the world was extraught, as our dreames in the night. In them all states, all sexes, all places are confounded and meete together.

Our cogitations runne on heapes like men to part a fray, where euerie one strikes his next fellow. From one place to another without consultation they leap, like rebells bent on a head. Souldiers iuſt vp and downe they imitate at the facke of a Citie, which spare neither age nor beautie: the yong, the old, trees, ſteeples & mountaines, they confound in one gallimafrie.

Of those things which are most knowne to vs some of vs that haue moyſt braynes make to ourſelves images of memorie: on those images of memorie whereon we buylde in the daye, comes some superfluous humour of ours, lyke a Iacke-anapes in the night, and erects a puppet-uſtage, or some such ridiculous idle childish inuention.

A Dreame is nothing els but the Eccho of our conceipts in the day.

But / other-while it falls out, that one Eccho borrowes of another: fo our dreames (the Ecchoes
OF THE NIGHT.

237

of the day) borrow of anie noyse we heare in the night.

As for example, if in the dead of the night there be anie rumbling, knocking, or disturbance neere vs, we straight dream of warres, or of thunder. If a dogge howle, we suppose we are transported into hell, where we heare the complaint of damned ghosts. If our heads lye double or vneasie, we imagine we uphold all heauen with our shoulders like Atlas. If wee be troubled with too manie clothes, then we suppose the night mare rides vs.

I knew one that was crampt, and hee dreamt that hee was torne in pieces with wylde horses; and another, that hauing a blacke fant brought to his bed fide at mid night, dreamt he was bidden to dinner at Iron-mongers Hall.

Anie meate that in the day time we eat against our stomackes, begetteth a dismall dreame. Discontent also in dreames hath no little predominance: for euén as from water that is troubled, the mud dispersingly ascendeth from the bottome to the top; so when our blood is chafed, disquieted and troubled, all the light imperfect humours of our bodie, ascend like mud vp aloft into the head.

The clearest spring a little tucht, is creased wyth a thousand circles: as those momentarie circles for all the world, such are our dreames. When all
is said, melancholy is the mother of dreames, and of all terrours of the night whatsoeuer.

Let it but affirme it hath seene a spirit (though it be but the moon-shine on the wall) the best reason wee haue cannot infringe it.

Of this melancholy there be two sortes; one that digested by our liuer swimmeth like oyle aboue water, & that is rightly tearmed Women's melancholy, which lasteth but for an houre, and is (as it were) but a coppie of their countenance: the other sinketh downe to the bottome like the lees of the wine, and that corrupteth all the blood, and is the cause of lunacie. Well moderated recreations are the medicine to both: surfeit or excesiue studie the causes of either.

There were gates in Rome, out of which nothing was carried but duft and dung, and men to execution: so manie of the gates of our senses serue for nothing but to conueigh out excrementall vapors, & afrighting deadly dreames, that are worse than executioners vnto vs.

Ah woe be to the solitarie man that hath his finnes continually about him, that hath no withdrawing place from the diuell and his temptations.

Much I wonder how treason and murder dispense with the darknes of the night, how they can shriue themselues to it, and not raue and die. Me thinkes they shuld imagine that hell imbraceth
them round, when she over spreads them with her
cblacke pitchie mantle.

Dreames to none are so fearfull, as to those
whose accusing priuate guilt expects mischiefe
euerie hower for their merit. Wonderfull super-
fstitious are such persons in obseruing euerie
accident that befalls them: and that their super-
fition is as good as an hundred furies to torment /
them. Neuer in this world shall he enjoy one
quiet day, that once hath giuen himselfe ouer to
be her flauie. His eares cannot glow, his nofe itch,
or his eyes smart, but his destinie stands vpon her
triall, and till she bee acquitted or condemned, he
is miserable.

A cricket or a rauen [will] keepe him forte
times in more awe than God or the Diuell.

If he chance to kill a spider, he hath suppressed
an enemie; if a spinner creepe vpon him, hee
shall haue golde raine downe from heauen: if his
nofe bleede, some of his kinsfolkes is dead: if the
salt fall right against him, all the starres cannot
faue him from some immediate misfortune.

The first Witch was Proserpine, and she dwelt
halfe in heauen and halfe in hell: halfe witches
are they that pretending anie Religion, meddle
halfe with God, and halfe with the diuell. Med-
ling with the diuell I call it, when ceremonies are
obserued, which haue no ground from Diuinitie.
In another kinde witches may be said to meddle halfe with God and halfe with the Diuell, because in their Exorcismes they vs halfe Scripture, and halfe blasphemie.

The greatest and notablest heathen forcerers that euer were, in all their hellish adiurations, used the name of the one true and euer-liuing God: but such a number of damned potestates they joined with him, that it might seeme the starres had darkned the Sunne, or the Moone was eclipsed by candle-light.

Of all Countries vnder the Skie, Persia was moft ad/dicted vnto Dreames. Darius King of the Medes and Persians before his fatall discomfiture, dreamt hee saw an Estritch with a winged crowne ouer-running the earth, and deuouring his Iuel-coffer, as if it had beene an ordinarie peece of yron. That Iuel-coffer was by Alexander surpris'd, and afterward Homers Workes in it carried before him, euen as the Mace or Purfe is cuftomably carried before our Lord Chancelor.

Hannibal dreamed a little before his death, that hee was drowned in the poysonous Lake Asphalites, when it was presently his hap within some few dayes distance, to seeke his fate by the same meanes in a vault vnder earth.

In India the women verie often conceiue by diuells in their sleepe.
OF THE NIGHT.

In Island (as I haue read and heard) spirites in lykenesse of ones father or mother after they are deceased, doo conuerse with them as naturally, as if they were liuing.

Other spirites like rogues they haue among them, destitute of all dwelling and habitation, and they chillingly complayne if a Constable aske them Cheuela in the night, that they are going to Mount Hecla to warme them.

That Mount Hecla a number conclude to bee hell mouth: for neere vnto it are heard such yellings and groanes, as Ixion, Titius, Sisphus, and Tantalus blowing all in one trumpet of distresse, could never conioyned bellowe foorth.

Bond/men in Turkey or in Spaine are not so ordinarilye sold, as witches sell familiars there. Farre cheaper maye you buy a winde amongst them, than you can buy wine or faire words in the Court. Three knots in a thred, or an odde grandame blessing in the corner of a napkin, will carrie you all the world ouer.

Wee when we frowne knit our browes, but let a wizard there knit a noose or a riding snarle on his beard, & it is haile, storme and tempeft a month after.

More might be spoken of the prodigies this countrey sendes foorth, if it were not too much erring from my scope. Whole Ilands they haue

N. III.
of yce, on which they build and traffique as on the maine land.

Admirable (aboue the rest) are the incomprehensible wonders of the bottomleffe Lake Vether, ouer which no fowle flies but is frozen to death, nor anie man paffeth but he is fenelesly benummed like a statue of marble. All the inhabitants round about it are deafned wyth the hideous roring of his waters when the winter breaketh vp, & the yce in his dissoluing giues a terrible cracke like to thunder, when as out of the midst of it (as out of Mont-Gibell) a sulphureous stinking smoak issues, that welnigh poysons the whole Countrey.

A poyson light on it, how come I to digreffe to such a dull, Lenten Northren Clyme, where there is nothing but flock-fish, whetstones and cods-heads? Yet now I remember me, I haue not lost my way so much as I thought, for my theame is The terrors of the Night, and Island is one of the chiefe kingdoms of the night; they hauing scarce so much day there, as will serue a child to ask his father[s] / blessing. Marry with one commoditie they are blest, they haue Ale that they carry in their pockets lyke glue, and euer when they would drinke, they set it on the fire and melt it.

It is reported, that the Pope long since gaue them a dispensation to receiue the Sacrament in ale, insomuch as for their vnceffant frosts there,
no wine but was turned to red emayle, as soone as euer it came amongst them. Farewell froft: as much to say, as farewell Iſland, for I haue no more to say to thee.

I care not much if I dream yet a little more: & to say the troth, all this whole Tra£tate is but a dreame, for my wits are not halfe awaked in it: & yet no golden dreame, but a leaden dreame is it; for in a leaden flandish I fland fishing all day, but haue none of Saint Peters lucke to bring a fish to the hooke that carries any filuer in the mouth. And yet there be of them that carrie filuer in the mouth too, but none in the hand: that is to say, are verie bountifull and honorable in their words, but except it be to fweare indeed, no other good deedes comes from them.

Filthie Italianat complement-mungers they are, who would faine be counted the Courts Gloriosos, and the refined iudges of wit; when if their wardrops and the withred bladders of their braines were well searcht, they haue nothing but a fewe moath-eaten cod-peece futes (made against the comming of Mounſier) in the one, and a few scraps of out-landish prouerbes in the other: and these alone doo buckler them from the name of beggers and idiots. Other-while perhaps they maye keep a coyle with / the spirit of Taffo, and then they folde their armes like Braggarts, writhe their
neckes *alla Neapolitano*, and turne vp their eye-balls like men intraunced.

Come, come, I am entraunced from my Text I wote well, and talke idlely in my fleepe longer than I shoulde: thosè that will harken any more after Dreames, I referre them to *Artimidorus, Synesius, & Cardan*, with many others which onely I haue heard by their names, but I thanke God had neuer the plodding patience to reade, for if they bee no better than some of them I haue perused, euery weatherwise old wife might write better.

What sense is there that the yoealke of an egge shoulde signifie gold, or dreaming of Beares, or fire, or water, debate and anger, that euerything must bee interpreted backward as Witches say their Pater-noster, good being the character of bad, and bad of good.

As well we may calculate from euery accident in the day, and not goe about any busines in the morning till we haue seene on which hand the Crow fits.

O Lord I haue heard many a wise Gentlewoman say, I am so merry, and haue laught so hartily, that I am sure ere long to bee croft with some sad tydinges or other; all one as if men comming from a Play shoulde conclude, Well we haue seene a Commedie to-day, and therefore there cannot choose but be a Tragedie to morrow.
OF THE NIGHT.

I doo not deny but after extremity of myrth, followe many sad accidents, but yet those sad accidents (in my pinion) wee meerely pluck[t] on with the feare of comming mischiefe, and those meanes wee in policie most vse to preuent it, sooneft enwrappe vs in it, and that was Sathans / tricke in the old world of gentillifme to bring to paffe all his blind Prophecies.

Could any men set downe certaine rules of expounding of Dreames, and that their rules were generall, holding in all as well as in some, I would beginne a litle to lift to them, but commonly that which is portentiue in a King is but a friuolous fancie in a beggar, and let him dreame of Angels, Eagles, Lyons, Griffons, Dragons neuer so, all the augurie vnder heauen will not allot him so much as a good almes.

Some will obieft vnto mee for the certainety of Dreames, the Dreames of Cyrus, Cambyles, Pompey, Caesar, Darius, & Alexander. For those I anfwer, that they were rather visions than Dreames, extraordinarily sent from heauen to foreshew the translation of Monarchies.

The Greeke and Romane histories are full of them, and such a stirre they keepe with their Augurers and Soothsayers, how they foretold long before by Dreames and beste and birds intrayles, the losse of such a battaile, the death of such a
Captaine or Emperour, when false knaues, they were all as Prophet Calchas, pernitious Traytors to their Country and them that put them in truist, and were many times hyred by the aduerse part to disharten and discourage their Masters by such Conycatching Riddles as might in truth be turned any way.

An easie matter was it for them to prognosticate treasons and conspiracies, in which they were vnderhand inlincked themselues, & however the world went it was a good pollicie for them to save their heads by the shift, for if the treasons chaunst afterwards to come to light, it would not be suspected they were practisers in them, info-much as they reueald them, or if they shoulde by their confederates be appealed as practisers, yet might they plead and pretend it was done but of spite and mallice to supplant them for so bewraying and laying open their intents.

This tricke they had with them besides, that never till the verie instant that anie treason was to be put in execution, and it was so neere at hand that the Prince had no time to preuent it, would they speake one word of it, or offer to disclose it: yea and even then such vnfit reasones for their colourable discouerie would they picke forth, as they would be sure he should haue no leasure to attend it.
But you will ask why at all as then they should step forth to detect it? Marry to cleare themselves to hys successors, that there might bee no reuenge prosecuted on their liues.

So did Spurina the great Astrologer: euene as Cæsar in the midst of all his busines was going haftely to the Senate house, he popt a bill in his hand of Brutus and Cassius conspiracie, and all the names of those that were colleagueed with them.

Well he might have thought that in such haft by the highway side, he would not stay to perufe any schedules, and well he knew and was asser-tained, that assoone as euer he came into the Capitoll, the bloudie deed was to be accomplished.

Shall I impart vnto you a rare secrecy how these great famous Coniurers and cunning men ascended by degrees to foretell secrets as they doo. First and foremost they are men which have had some little sprinkling of Grammer learning in their youth; or at least I will allowe them to have been Surgeons or Apothecaries prentifes, these I say hauing runne through their thrift at the elbowes, and riotouslie amongst harlots and make-shifts spent the annuitie of halfpennie ale that was left them, fall a beating their braynes how to botch vp an easie gainfull trade, & set a new nap on an old occupation.
Hereupon presently they rake some dunghil for a few durtie boxes and plaisters, and of tofted cheese and candles ends, temper vp a fewe oyntments and sIRRUPS: which hauing done, faire North, or into some such rude simple countrey they get them, and set vp.

Scarce one month have they stayd there, but what with their vaunting and prating, and speaking fuftian in fteede of Greeke, all the Shyres round about do ring with their fame: and then they begin to get them a Library of three or foure old rustie manuscript books, which they themselves nor anie els can read; and furnish their shops with a thousand quid pro quos, that would choake anie horfe: besides, some waft trinkets in their chambers hung vp, which maye make the world halfe in iealouzie they can coniure.

They will euermore talke doubtfully, as if there were more in them than they meant to make publique, or was appliable to euerie common mans capacitie: when God bee their rightfull Judges, they vtter all that they know and a great deale more.

To knit vp their knaueries in short (which in sooth is the hang-mans office, & nones els) hauing pickt vp theyr crummes thus pretely well in the Countrey, they drawe after a time a little neerer and neerer to London; and at length into
London they filch themselues priuely: but how?
Not in the hart of the Cittie will they presume
at first dash to hang out their rat-banners, but
in the skirtes and out-shifts steale out a signe
ouer a Coblers stall, lyke Aqua-vitæ sellers and
stocking menders.

Manie poore people they win to beleue in
them, who haue not a barreld Herring or a peecce
of poore Iohn that lookes ill on it, but they will
bring the water that he was steept in vnto them
in an vrinall, & craue their judgment whether he
be rotte, or merchant & chapmanable or no. The
brute of their cunning thus travelling frō ale house
to Ale house, at length is transported in the great
hiltes of one or other countrey Seruing-mans sword
to some good Tauerne or Ordinarie: where it is
no sooner arriued, but it is greedily snatcht vp
by some dappert Mounfier Diego, who liues by
telling of newes, & false dice, and it may be hath
a pretie insight into the cardes also, together with
a little skill in his Jacobs staffe, and hys Compasse:
being able at all times to discouer a new passage
to Virginia.

This needie Gallaunt (with the qualities afore-
faid) straight trudgeth to some Noble-mans to
dinner, & there enlargeth the rumor of this newe
Phisition, comments vpon euerie glasse and violl
that he hath, rayleth on our Galenifts, and calls
them dull gardners and hay-makers in a mans belly, compares them to dogs, who when they are sick eate grassfe, and faites they are no better than pack / or malt horses, who if a man should knock out their brains will not goe out of the beaten high way; wheras his horsleach will leap ouer the hedge & ditch of a thousand Dioscorides and Hippocrates, and giue a man twentie poyfons in one, but he would restore him to perfit health. With this strange tale the Noble-man inflamed, desires to bee acquainted with him: what does me he, but goes immediately and breaks with this mountebanke, telling him if he will diuide his gains with him, he will bring him in cuftome with fuch and fuch States, and he shall bee countenanft in the Court as he wold desire. The hungrie druggier, ambitious after preferment, agrees to anything, and to Court he goes; where being come to enterview, hee speaks nothing but broken English like a French Doctor, preteding to haue forgottē his naturall tung by trauell, when he hath neuer been farther than either the Lowe Countries or Ireland, inforced thether to flye either for getting a maid with child, or marrying two wiues. Suffiseth he fet[s] a good face on it, & will sweare he can extract a better Balfamum out of a chip than the Balm of Judæa: yea, all receipts and authors you can name he syllogizeth of, & makes
a pitf at in comparison of them he hath seen and read: whose names if you ask, he claps you in the mouth with half a dozen spruce titles, never til he inuited them heard of by any Christian. But this is most certaine, if he be of any sect, he is a mettle-bruing Paracelsian, having not past one or two Probatus for all diseases. But case he be called to practise, he excusateth it by great cures he hath in hand; & will not encounter an infirmity but in the declining, that his credit may be more autetical or els when by some secret intelligence he is throughlie instructed of the whole process of his unrecouerable extremity, he comes grauely marching like a Judge, and giues peremptorie sentence of death; whereby he is accounted a Prophet of deepe prescience.

But how he comes to be the diuells secretarie, all this long tale vnrips not.

In secret be it spoken, he is not so great with the devill as you take it. It may be they are neere a kinne, but yet you haue manie kindred that will doo nothing for one another; no more will the diuell for him, except it is to damne him.

This is the Tittle eft amen of it: that when he wexeth tale, and all his pisports are crackt and wil no longer hold water, he sets vp a conjuring schoole, and vndertakes to play the baud to Ladie Fortune.
Not a thiefe or a cut purfe, but a man that hee keepes doth associate with, & is of their fraternitie; only that his master when any thing is stoln may tell who it is that hath it. In petie trifles hauing gotten some credit, great Peeres entertaine him for one of their priuie counfaile, and if they haue anie daungerous enterprife in hand, they consult with him about successe.

All malcontents entending anie inuafiue violence against their Prince and Countrey runne head long to his oracle. Contrarie faotions enbofome vnto him their inwardeft complots, whileft he like a craftie Iacke a both sides, as if he had a spirite still at his elbow, reciprocallie embowelleth to the one what the other goes about; receiuing no intelligence from anie familiar, but their own mouths./ I afure you moost of our chiefes noted Augurers and Soothsayers in England at this day, by no other Arte but this gaine their reputation.

They may verie well picke mens purfes, like the vnskilfuller couning kind of Alchumists, with their artificiall and ceremoniall Magicke, but no effect shall they atchieue thereby, though they would hang themselues: the reason is, the diuell of late is growen a puritane, and cannot away with anie ceremonies; he sees all Princes haue left off their States, and hee leaues off his state too, and
will not be inuocated with such solemnity as he was wont.

Priuate and disguifed he paffeth too and fro, and is in a thousand places in an houre.

Faire words cannot anie longer beguile him, for not a cue of curtifie will he doo anie man, except it be vpon a flat bill of fale; and fo he chaffers with wyfands and witches euerie howre.

Now the world is almost at an end, he hath left forme and is all for matter; and like an Embroyderer or a Tailer he maketh haft of worke againft a good time, which is the day of judgement: therefore you goodmen exorcifers his olde acquaintance muft pardon him, though (as heretofore) he stay not to dwell vpon complements.

In diebus illis when Corineus and Gogmagog were little boyes, I will not gainfaye but hee was wont to left and fport wyth countrey people, and play the good fellowe amongst kitchin-wenches, fitting in an euening by the fire fide making of posflets, and come a wooing to them in the likenes of a cooper, or a curmogionly purchafer: & fome /times he would dreffe himfelfe like a Barbar, & wash and fo que all thoſe that laye in fuch a chamber: other-while like a stale cutter of Queen hyue, hee would iuftle men in their owne houses, pluck them out of bed by the heeles, and daunce in chaynes from
one chamber to another: now there is no goodnes in him but miserablenes and couetousnes.

Sooner he will pare his nayles cleanly, than cause a man to dreame of a pot of golde, or a money bag that is hid in the eaues of a thatcht house.

(Heere it is to bee noted, that it is a blessed thing but to dreame of gold, though a man neuer haue it.)

Such a dreame is not altogether ridiculous or impertinent, for it keepes flesh and bloud from despaire: all other are but as dust we raife by our steps; which awhyle mounteth aloft, and annoyeth our ey-fight, but presently disperseth and vanisheth.

Senior Sathan when he was a yong stripling, and had not yet gotten perfect audacity to set vpon vs in the day time, was a fly Polititian in dreames; but those dayes are gone with him, and now that he is thorougly steeled in his scutcherie, hee playes aboue-boord boldly, & tweekes more stakes than euer he did before.

I haue rid a falsè gallop these three or foure pages; now I care not if I breathe mee, and walke soberly and demurely halfe a dozen turnes, like a graue Citizen going about to take the ayre.

To make a shaft or a bolt of this drumbling
OF THE NIGHT.

Subject of dreams, from whence I have been tossed and on I know not how; this is my definitive verdict: that one may as well by the smoke that comes out of a kitchen chimney what meat is there a broach, as by paraphrasing on smokie dreams præominate of future events. Thus far notwithstanding I go with them; Phisitions by dreams may better discern the diatemperature of their pale clients, than either by vrine or ordure.

He that is inclining to a burning fire shall dream of frayes, lightning and thunder, of skirmishing with the diuell, and a hundred such like. He that is spiced with the Gowte or the Dropsie, frequently dreameth of fetters & manacles, and being put on the bilbowes, that his legges are turned to marble or adamant, and his feet like the giants that Scal’d heauen kept vnder with Mount Ossa and Peleon, and earst while that they are fast locked in quagmyres. I have heard aged mumping beldams as they sat warming their knees over a coale scratch over the argument verie curiously, and they would bid yong folks beware on what day they par’d their nayles, tell what luck euery one should haue by the day of the weke he was borne on; show how many years a man should liue by the number of wrinkles on his forhead, and stand descanting
not a little of the difference in fortune when they are turned upward, and when they are bent downward; him that had a wart on his chin, they would confidently assertaine he should have no need of anie of his kin: marry they would likewise distinguish betwene the standing of the wart on the right side and on the left. When I was a little childe, I was a great auditor of theirs, and had all their witchcrafts at my fingers endes, as perfit as good morrow and good euen.

Of the signification of dreams, whole catalogues could I recyte of theirs, which here there is no roome for: but for a glance to this purpose, this I remember they would verie soberly affirmme, that if one at supper eate birds, he should dreame of flying; if fish, of swimming; if venison of hunting, and so for the rest: as thogh those birds, fish, and venison beeing dead and digested, did fly, swim and hold their chase in their braynes; or the solution of our dreames should be nought els but to express what meates we eate ouer-night.

From the vnequall and repugnant mixture of contrarious meates I iumpe with them, manie of our mystic cogitations proceede: and euen as fire maketh yron like it selfe, so the fire inflammanations of our liuer, or stomack transforme our imaginations to their analagie and likenesse.
OF THE NIGHT.

No humor in generall in our bodies overflowing or abounding, but the tips of our thoughts are dipt in hys tincture. And as when a man is readie to drowne, hee takes hold of anie thing that is next him: so our flutring thoughts, when wee are drowned in deadly sleepe, take hold, and coeisence themselfes with anie ouerboyling humour which fourfeth hieft in our stomaches.

What heede then is there to be had of dreams, that are no more but the confused giddie action of our braines, made drunk with the innundation of humors?

Iuft such like impostures as is this Art of exposition of dreames, are the artes of Phisioignomie and Palmeatrie; wherein who beareth most palme and praiſe, is the palpabeſt/foole and Crepundio. Liues there anie fuch flowe yce-braind beeſ-witted gull, who by the riueld barke or outward rynde of a tree will take vpon him to forespeak how long it ſhall ſtand, what mischances of wormes, caterpillers, boughs breaking, froſt bitings, cattells rubbing againſt, it ſhall haue? As abfurd is it, by the external branched feames or furrowed wrinckles in a mans face or hand, in particular or generall to conieecture and foredoome of his fate.

According to euerie ones labor or exercife, the palme of his hand is wrythen and pleyted, and

N. III. 17
euerie daye alters as he alters his employments or pastimes: wherfore well may we collect, that he which hath a hand so brawned and enter-lined, vseth such and such toyles or recreations; but for the minde or disposition, we can no more looke into through it, than wee can into a looking Glasse through the woorden case thereof.

So alfo our faces, which sundrie times with surfets, greefe, studie, or intemperaunce, are most deformedlye welked and crumpled; there is no more to bee gathered by their sharpe embossed Ioyners anticke worke, or ragged ouer hangings or pit-falls; but that they haue beene layd vp in flouens presle, and with miscarriage and mis-gouernment are so fretted and galled.

My owne experience is but small, yet thus much I can say by his warrantize, that those fatall brands of phisiognomie which condemne men for fooles, and for idiots, and on the other side for trecherous circumueters and false brothers, haue in a hundred men I know been veriefied in the contrarie.

So Socrates (the wifest man of Greece) was cenfured by a wrinkle-wyzard for the lumpisheft blockhead that euer went vpon two legs: whome though the Philosopher in pitie vouchsafed with a nyce distinction of Art and nature to rayse and recouer, when he was utterly confounded with
a hisse and a laughter, yet sure his insolent sim-
plicity might lawfully haue fu'd out his patent
of exemption; for he was a forlorne creature,
both in discretion and wit-craft.

Will you have the summe of all: some subtill
humorist, to feede fantasticke heads with innova-
tions and nouelties, first inuented this trifling
childish glose vpon dreames and phisognomie;
wherein he stroue onely to boasf him felfe of a
pregnant probable conceipt beyond philosophie
or truth.

Let but anie man who is most conuerfant in the
superfition of dreames, reckon me one that hath
hapned iuft; and Ile set downe a Hundred out
of Histories, that haue perished to foolerie.

To come to late dayes; Lewes the xj. dreamt
that he swam in blood on the toppe of the Alpes:
which one Father Robert (a holy Hermit of his
time) interpreted to be present death in his next
warres against Italy: though hee liu'd and pro-
perd in all his enterprifes a long whyle after.

So Charles the fift sayling to the siege of
Tunis, dreamt that the Citie met him on the sea
like an Argosie, and ouerwhelmed his whole
Nauie: when by Cornelius Agrippa the great
Coniurer (who went along with him) it was
expounded to be the ouerthrow of that famous
expedition. / And thereupon Agrippa offred the
Emperor (if it pleased him) to blowe vp the Citie by Art Magicke in the ayre before his eyes, without anie farther jeopardy of warre or besieging. The Emperor utterly refused it and said, Since it was Gods warres against an Infidel, he would neuer borrow aid of the diuell.

Some haue memorized, that Agrippa seeing his counsaile in that case rejected, and that the Emperor (notwithstanding his vnhurtune presage) was prosperous and successfull, within a few dayes after dyed franticke and desperate.

Alphonso King of Naples in like case, before the rumor of the French Kings comming into Italy, had a vision in the night presented vnto him of Æneas ghooft hauing Turnus in chase, & Iuno Pronuba comming betwixt them, and parting them; whereby hee gess that by marriage their iarring Kingdomes should be vnited: but far otherwise it fell out; for the French King came indeed, and he was driuen thereby into such a melancholy extasie, that he thought the verie fowles of the ayre would snatch his Crowne from him; and no bough or arbour that over-shadowed him, but enclosed him, and tooke him prifner; and that not so much but the stones of the street fought to iustle him out of his Throne.

These examples I alledge, to proue there is
no certaintie in dreames; and that they are but according to our deuifings and meditations in the day time.

I confesse the Saintes and Martirs of the Primi-tue Church had vnfallible dreames fore-running their ends, as *Policarpus* and other: but those especially proceeded from / heauen, and not from anie vaporous dreggie parts of our blood or our braines.

For this caufe the Turkes banish Learning from amongst them, because it is euery daye setting men together by the eares, mouing straunge contentions, and alterations, and making his pro-fessors fainthearted and effeminate. Much more requisite were it that out of our ciuill Christia-n Common-wealths we seuerely banish and exter-minate those fabulous commentaries on toyish fantasies, which feare-benum & effeminate the harts of the stoutest, cause a man without any ground to be icalous of his owne frends and his kinsfolkes, and withdraw hym from the search and insignt into more excellent things, to stand all his whole life sifting and winnowing dry rubbish chaffe, whose best bottom quintesence prooues in the end but sandie grauell and cockle.

Moleftations and cares inough, the ordinarie course of our life tythes of his owne accord
unto vs, though we seeke not a knot in a bulrush, or stuffe not our night pillowes with thistles to encrease our disturbance.

In our sleepe wee are agafted and terrified, with the disordered skirmishing and conflicting of our sensitiue faculties: yet with this terror and agaftment cannot wee rest ourselves satisfied, but we must pursue and hunt after a further feare in the recordation and too busie examining our paines ouer-passe.

Dreames in my minde if they haue anie premonstrances in them, the preparatiue feare of that they so premonstrate and denounce, is far worfe than the mischiefe it selfe by them denounced and premonstrated.

So there is no long sicknesse but is worfe than death, for death is but a blowe and awaye, whereas sicknesse is like a Chancerie fute, which hangs two or three yeare ere it can come to a judgement.

O a consumption is worfe than a Capias ad Ligatum, to nothing can I compare it better, than to a repriue after a man is condemned, or to a boy with his hoafe about his heelles, ready to be whipt, to whom his master stands preaching a long time all law and no Gospel, ere he proceed to execution. Or rather it is as a man should be rosted to death, and melt away by little and
little, whiles Phisitons lyke Cookes fland stuffing
him out with hearbes, and bafting him with this
oyle and that frrrup.

I am of the opinion, that to be famisht to
death is farre better, for his paine in feauen or
eight dayes is at an end, whereas he that is in a
consumption, continues languishing manie yeares
cere death haue mercie on him.

The next plague and the neereft that I know,
in affinitie to a consumption, is long depending
hope friuolously defeated, than which there is no
greater miferie on earth: & so per consequens no
men in earth more miserable than courtiers. It
is a cowardly feare that is not resolute inough to
despaire. It is like a pore hunger starvd wretch
at sea, who still in expectation of a good voyage,
endures more miferies than Iob. He that writes
this can tell, for he hath neuer had good voyage
in his life but one, & that was to a fortunate
blessed Iland, nere those pinacle rocks called the
Needles. O it is a purifed Continent, & a fertill
plot fit to seat another Paradice, where or in no
place, the image of the ancient hospitatitie is to be
found.

While I liue I will praiše it and extoll it, for
the true magnificence and continued honourable
bountie that I saw there.

Farre vnworthie am I to fpend the leaft breath
of commendation in the extolling so delightfull and pleasant a Tempe, or once to consecrate my inke with the excellent mention of the thrice noble and illustrious Chieftaine vnder whom it is flourishingly gouerned.

That rare ornament of our Countrey, learned Master Camden, whose desertfull name is universally admyred throughout Christendome, in the last repollished Edition of his Brittania, hath most elaborate and exactly described the souereigne plenteous situation of that Ile; as also the inestimable happines it inherites, it beeing patronizd and carefully protected by so heroicall and courageous a Commaunder.

Men that haue neuer tafted that full spring of his liberalitie, wherwich (in my most forfaken extremities) right graciously hee hath deigned to reuiue and refreh mee, may rashly (at first sight) implead me of flatterie, and not esteeme these my fervent tearmes as the necessarie repaiment of due debt, but words idly begotten with good lookes, and in an ouer-joyed humour of vaine hope fipt from me by chance: but therein they shall shewe themselues too vncivil injurious, both to my deuoted obseruant dutie, and the condigne deare purchased merite of his glorie.

Too base a ground is this, whereon to embroyder the rich storie of his eternall renowne;
some longer lyued Traetate I referue for the full blaze of his vertues, which here /onely in the sparkes I decypher. Manie embers of encum-braunces haue I at this time, which forbid the bright flame of my zeale to mount aloft as it would. Perforce I must breake from it, since other turbulent cares fit as now at the stearn of my inuention. Thus I conclude with this chance medley Parenthesis, that whatsoever minutes inter-mission I haue of calmed content, or leaft respite to call my wits together, principall and immediate proceedeth from him.

Through him my tender wainscot studie doore is deliuered from much assault and battrie: through him I looke into, and am looked on in the world: from whence otherwise I were a wretched banished exile. Through him all my good (as by a conduit head) is conueighed vnto me; and to him all my endeuours (like riuers) shall pay tribute as to the Ocean.

Did Ouid entitle Carus a Noble-man of Rome, the onely constant frend hee had, in his vngratefull extrusion amongst the Getes: and writ to him thus,

**Qui quod es id verè Care vocaris.**

And in another Elegie,

**O mihi post nullos Care memorande sodales ?**
Much more may I acknowledge all redundant prostrate vaffailage to the royall descended Familie of the Careys: but for whom, my spirit long ere this had expyred, and my pen feru’d as a puniard to gall my owne hart.

Why doo I vse so much circumstance, and in a streame on which none but gnats and flies doo swimme, found Fames trumpet like Triton, to call a number of foolish skiffes and light cock-boates to parley?

Feare (if I be not deceiud) was the laft pertinent matter I had vnder my displing; from which I feare I haue strayed beyond my limits: and yet feare hath no limits, for to hell and beyond hell, it sinkes downe and penetrates.

But this was my position, that the feare of anie expected euill, is worse than the euill it felfe; which by dyuers comparisons I confirmed.

Now to visions and apparitions againe, as faft as I can trudge.

The glasse of our fight (in the night) are like the prospectiuie glasse one Hoftius made in Rome, which represented the images of things farre greater than they were: each moate in the darke they made a monster, and euerie sleight glimmering a giant.

A solitarie man in his bed, is like a poore bed-red lazar, lying by the highway fide; vnto whose
OF THE NIGHT.

displayed wounds and fores a number of stinging flyes doo swarme for pastance and beuerage: his naked wounds are his inward hart-griping woes, the waspnes and flyes his idle wandering thoughts; who to that secret smarting pain he hath alreadie, do adde a further sting of impatience, and new lanch his sleeping griefes and vexations.

Questionlesse this is an unrefutable consequence, that the man who is mocked of his fortune, he that hath consumed his braines to compass pro-
spiritie, and meetes with no counteruaylement in hir likenesse, but hedge wine and leane mutton, and peraduenture some halfe eid good looks that can hardly be discerned from winking; this poore piteous perplexed miscreant either final / lie despaire[s]; or like a lanke frost-bitten plant looseth hys vigor or spirit by little and little: anie terror, the leaft illusion in the earth, is a Cacodemon vnto him. His soule hath left his bodie; for, why, it is flying after these ayrie incorporeate Courtly promises, and glittring painted allurements; which when they vanish to nothing, it lykewise vanisheth with them.

Excessiue ioy no leffe hath his defectiue and ioylesse operations, the spleene into water it melteth; so that except it be some momentarie bubbles of mirth, nothing it yeelds but a cloying surfet of repentance.
Diuers instances haue we of men, whom too much sodaine content and ouer-rauished delight hath brought vntimely to their graues.

Foure or fiue I haue read of, whom the very extremitie of laughter hath bereft of their liues: whereby I gather, that euen such another pernitious sweete, superfluous mirth is to the fence, as a surfet of honnie to a mans stomacke, than the which there is nothing more dangerous.

Bee it as dangerous as it will, it cannot but be an easie kinde of death. It is like one that is stung with an Aspis, who in the midst of his paine falls delighted asleepe, and in that suauitie or slumber surrenders the ghoft: whereas hee whom greefe vndertakes to bring to his end, hath his hart gnawen in sunder by little & little with vultures, like Prometheus.

But this is nothing (you will obieect) to our journeys ende of apparitions. Yes, altogether: for of the ouerswelling superabundance of ioy and greefe, wee frame to / our selues most of our melancholy dreames and visions.

There is an old Philosophical common Proverbe, Vnusquisque fingt fortunam sibi, Euerie one shapes hys owne fortune as he lifts. More aptly may it be said, Euerie one shapes his owne feares and fancies as he lift.

In all points our brains are like the firmament,
OF THE NIGHT.

and exhale in every respect the like gross mistempered vapors and meteors; of the more feculent combustible airy matter whereof, affrighting forms and monstrous images innumerable are created: but of the flyme vnweeldier drossie part, dull melancholy or droulines.

And as the firmament is still mouing and working, so vnceffant is the wheeling and rolling on of our braines; which euerie hower are tempring some newe peece of prodigie or other, and tumoyling, mixing and changing the course of our thoughts.

I write not this, for that I thinke there are no true apparitions or prodigies, but to shew how easily we may be flouted if we take not great heed, with our own anticke suppositions. I will tell you a strange tale tending to this nature: whether of true melancholy or true apparition, I will not take vpon me to determine.

It was my chance in Februarie laft to be in the Countrey some threescore myle off from London; where a Gentleman of good worship and credit falling sicke, the verie second day of his lying downe, hee pretended to haue miraculous waking visions: which before I enter to describe, thus much I will informe ye by the way, that at the reporting of them he was in perfect memorie; nor had/ sicknes yet so tirannizd ouer him to make
his tongue grow idle. A wife graue sensible man he was ever reputed, and so approou'd himselfe in all his actions in his life time. This which I deliver (with manie preparatiue protestations) to a great Man of this Land hee confidently auouched: beleeeue it or condemne it, as you shal see caufe, for I leaue it to be censured indifferently.

The first day of his distemprature, he visibly saw (as he affirmed) al his chamber hung with silken nets and filuer hookes, the diuell (as it shoud seeme) comming thither a fishing; where-upon [he said] euery [word of] Pater nofter, while he looke whether in the nets he shoule be entangled, or with the hookes enfnared; with the nets he feard to be strangeld or smootherd, & with the hooks to haue his throat scratcht out, and his flesh rent and mangled: at length, he knew not how, they sodainly vanished, and the whole chamber was clered. Next a copanie of lufty failers (euerie one a sharker or a swaggerer at the leaft) hauing made a braue voyage, came carousing and quaffing in large filuer kans to his helth. Fellowes they were that had good big pop mouths to crie Port a helme Saint George, and knew as well as the beft what belongs to haling of bolings yare, and falling on theftar-boord buttocke.

But to the issue of my tale: their drunken proffers he vtterly put by, and sayd hee highly
scorned and detested both them and their hellish disguisings: which notwithstanding, they tost their cups to the skies, and reeled and staggered vp and downe the roome like a ship shaking in the winde.

After all they danst Lustie gallant, & a drunken Danifh Laualto /or two, and so departed. For the third course, rush't in a number of stately diuels, bringing in boystrous chestes of maffie treasure betwixt the. As braue they were as Turkish Ianissaries, hauing their apparel all powdred with gold and pearle, and their armes as it were be-mayled with rich chaynes and bracelets; but faces far blacker than anie ball of Tobacco, great glaring eyes that had whole shelues of Kentish oysters in them, and terrible wyde mouthes, whereof not one of them, but would well haue made a case for Molenax great Gloabe of the world.

These louely youths and full of fauour, hauing falkt vp and downe the iust measures of a sink-space, opened one of the principall chestes they brought, and out of it pluckt a Princely royall Tent, whose empearled shining canopie they quickly advanc'd on hie, and with all artificiall magnificence adorned like a state: which performed, pompous Lucifer entred, imitating in goodly stature the huge picture of Laocoon at Rome: who sent vnto him a gallant Embassadour, signifying
thus much, that if hee would serue him, hee should haue all the rich treasures that he saw there, or anie farther wealth hee would desire.

The Gentleman returned this milde aunswere, that he knew not what he was, whether an Angell or a wicked feend: and if an Angell, he was but his fellow seruant, and no otherwise to be serued or regarded; if a fiend or a diuell, hee had nothing to doo with him, for God had exalted and redeemed him aboue his desperate out-cast condition, and a strong faith he had to defie & withstand all /his iugling temptations. Hauing uttered these words, all the whole traine of them invisibly auoyded, and hee never set eye on them after.

Then did ther, for the third pageant, present themselues vnto him, an inueigling troupe of naked Virgins, thrice more amiable and beautifull than the bright Vestals, that brought in Augustus Testament to the Senate, after his deceafe: but no Vestall-like Ornament had they about them; for from top to toe bare despoyled they were, except some one or two of them that ware mafkes before their faces, and had transparent azur'd lawne veyles before the chiefe iewell houfes of their honour.

Such goodly luftfull Bonarobaes they were (by his report) as if anie sharpe eyd Painter had been there to peruse them, he might haue learned to
exceed divine *Michel Angelo* in the true boske of a naked, or curious *Tuns* in quicke life, whom the great masters of that Art do terme the sprightly old man.

Their haire they ware loose vnrowled about their shoulders, whose dangling amber trammells reaching downe beneath their knees, seemed to drop baulme on their delicious bodies; and euer as they moou’d too and fro, with their light windye wauings, wantonly to correct their exquisitie mistresses.

Their daintie feete in their tender birdlike trippings, enameld (as it were) the duftie ground; and their odoriferous breath more perfumed the aire, than Ordinance would, that is charged with *Amomum, Muske, Cyuet, and Amber-greece*.

But to leaue amplifications and proceed: those sweet / bewitching naked maides, hauing maieftically paced about the chamber, to the end their naturall vnshelled shining mother pearle proportions might be more imprimtingly apprehended, close to his bed-side modestly blushing they approched, & made impudent profer vnto him of their lafciuous embraces. He obstinatly bent to withstand these their sinfull allurements no leffe than the former, bad them goe seek entertainment of hotter bloods, for he had not to satisifie them. A cold comfort was this to poore wenches no
better cloathed, yet they hearing what to truft too, verie sorrowfully retyr'd, and shrunk away.

Lo in the fourth Act, there fallied out a graue assembly of sober attyred Matrones, much like the Virgines of Marie Magdalens order in Rome, which vowe neuer to fee man; or the chafte daughters of Saint Philip.

With no incontinent curtesie did they greet him, but tolde him, if fo hee thought good they would praye for him.

Therupon, frō the beginning to the ending he vnfolded vnto them, how he had been mightely hanted with wicked illusions of late: but neuer-theles, if he could be perfuaded that they were Angels or Saintes, their invocations could not hurt him; yea he would adde his desire to their requests, to make their prayers more penetrably enforcing.

Without further parley, vppon their knees they fell moſt deuoutly, and for halfe an hower neuer ceased extensiuely to intercessionate God for his speedie recoverie.

Rising / vp agayne on the right hand of his bed, there appeared a cleare light, and with that he might perceiue a naked slender foote offering to steale betwixt the sheets in to him.

At which instant, entred a messenger from a Knight of great honour thereabouts, who sent him
a most precious extract quintessence to drinke: which no sooner he tastted, but he thought hee saw all the fore-named Enterluders at once, hand ouer head leap, plunge, & drowne themselfes in puddles and ditches hard by, and hee felt perfect ease. But long it lafted not with him, for within foure howers after, hauing not fully settled his eftate in order, hee grewe to trifling dotage, and rauing dyde within two daies following.

God is my witnesse, in all this relation, I borrowe no essentiel part from stretcht out inuention, nor haue I one iot abusde my informations; onely for the recreation of my Readers, whom loath to tyre with a course home-spunne tale, that shoud dull them worse than Holland cheefe, heere and there I welt and garde it with allusiuue exornations and comparifons: and yet me thinkes it comes off too goutie and lumbring. Bee it as it will, it is lyke to haue no more allowaunce of English for mee. If the world will giue it anie allowaunce of truth, so it is: For then I hope my excuse is alreadye lawfully customed and authorized; sìnce Truth is euer drawne and painted naked, and / I haue lent her but a leathren patcht cloake at most to keepe her from the colde: that is, that she come not off too lamely and coldly.
Vpon the accidentall occasion of this dreame or apparition (call or miscall it what you will, for it is yours as freely as anie waft paper that ever you had in your lieues) was this Pamphlet (no bigger than an old Præface) speedily botcht vp and completed.

Are there anie doubts which remaine in your mynde vn digested, as touching this incredible Narration I haue vnfolded? Well, doubt you not, but I am milde and tractable, and will resolue you in what I may.

Firſt, the house where this Gentleman dwelt, stood in a low marifti ground, almoſt as rotten a Clymate as the Lowe Countreyes; where their myſtie ayre is as thicke as mould butter, and the deaw lyes like froathie barme on the ground.

It was noted ouer and besides to haue been an vnluckie house to all his predeceſsors, ſeituate in a quarter not altogether exempted from witches.

The abrupt falling into his ſickneſse was ſuspitious, proceeding from no apparent ſurfet or miſdiet. The outragious tyrannie of it in ſo ſhort a time, bred thricſe more admiration and wonder, and his sodaine death incontinent enſuing vppon that his diſcloſed dreame or viſion, might ſeeme ſome probable reaſon to confirme it; ſince none haue ſuch palpable dreames or viſions, but die ſpreſently after.
The like to this was Master Allingtons vision in the beginning of her Maiesties raigne; than the which there is nothing / more ordinariilie bruted. Through Greeke and Romane common-places to this purport I could runne, if I were disposed to vaunt my selfe like a ridiculous Pedant, of deepe reading in Fulgoftius, Licofthenes, and Valerius.

Goe no farther than the Court, and they will tell you of a mightie worthie man of this Land; who riding in his Coatch from London to his house, was all the waye haunted with a couple of Hogges, who followed him close, and doo what his men could they might not druie them from him: wherefore at night hee caused them to be shut vp in a barne, and commanded milke to be giuen them; the barne dore was lockt, and the key safely kept, yet were they gone by morning, and no man knew how.

A number of men there be yet living, who haue been haunted by their wiuues after their death, about forswearing themselues, and vndooing their children, of whom they promised to be carefull fathers: whereof I can gather no reason but this, that Women are borne to torment a man both aliue and dead.

I haue heard of others likewise, that beside these night terrors, haue been (for whole months
together whether foeuer they went or rid) pursu’d
by weels and rats, and oftentimes with squirrels
and hares; that in the traveling of three hundred
myle, haue still wayted on their horse heele.

But those are onely the expoytes and stratagems
of witches, which may well astonish a little at
first fight, but if a man haue the leaft heart
or spirite to with-stand one fierce blast of their
brauadoes, he shall see them shrinke faster / than
Northren cloath, and out-fruit time in daftardly
flight.

Fie, fie, was euer poore fellow so farre benighted
in an old wiues tale of diuells and vrchins. Out
vpon it, I am wearie of it, for it hath caused such
a thicke fullsome Serena to descend on my braine,
that now my penne makes blots as broad as a
furd ftomacher, and my muse inspyres me to put
out my candle and goe to bed: and yet I wyll
not neyther, till after these nights reuell, I haue
solemnly bid you good night, and sleep quietly
without affrightment and annoyance.

First and formost drinke moderately, and dice
and drabbe not away your money prodigally, and
then forswear your felues to borrow more.

You that be pore mens children, know your
own fathers; & though you can shift & cheate
yourselues into good cloathes here about Towne;
yet bow your knees to their leathern bagges and
ruffet coates, that they may blesse you from the ambition of Tiburne.

You that beare the name of fouldiers, and liue baselie swaggering in euerie ale-house, hauing no other exhibition but from harlots and strumpets; seeke some newe trade, and leaue whoring and quarrelling, leaft besides the nightly guilt of your owne banqurout confciences, Bridewell or Newgate prooue the ende of your cauclearing.

You, whosoeuer or wherefoeuer you be, that liue by spoyling and ouer-reaching yong Gentlemen, and make but a spport to deride their simplicities to their vndooing, to /you the Night at one time or other will proue terrible, except you foorthwith thinke on restitution: or if you haue not your Night in this world, you will haue it in hell.

You that are married and haue wiues of your owne, and yet hold too nere frendship with your neighbours; set vp your rests, that the Night will be an il neighbour to your rest, and that you shall haue as little peace of minde as the rest. Therefore was Troy burnt by night, because Paris by night prostituted Helena, and wrought such treson to Prince Menelaus.

You that are Macheuilian vaine fooles, and thinke it no wit or pollicie but to vowe and protest what you neuer meane, that trauell for nothing els but to learne the vices of other
countries, and disfigure the ill English faces that
God hath giuen you, with Tuscan glickes and
applish trickes; the night is for you with a blacke
faunt or a matachine, except you presently turne
and convert to the simplicitie you were borne too.

You that can cast a man into an Italian ague
when you lift, and imitate with your diet drinkes
anie diseafe or infirmitie, the night likewife hath
an infernall to act before yee.

Traitors that by night meete and confult how
to walke in the day vndiscovered, & thinke those
words of Christ vainly spoken, There is nothing
done in secret but shalbe revealed and laid open:
to you no leffe the night shalbe as a night owle
to vexe and torment you.

And finallie, O you Judges and Magistrates, if
there bee anye amongst you, that doo wreft all
the Lawe into / their owne hands, by drawing and
receyuing every mans money into their hands,
and making newe golden lawes of their owne,
which nor Prince nor Parliament euer dreamed
of; that looke as iuft as Iehouah by daye,
enthronizing graue zeale and religion on the
eleuated whites of their eyes, when by night
corrupt gifts and rewards rufh in at their gates
in whole Armies, like Northren Carriers comming
to their Inne; that in steede of their bookes
turne ouer their bribes, for the deciding of causes,
adiudging him the best right, that brings the richest present vnto them. If anie such there be I say, as in our Common-wealth I know none, but haue read of in other States, let them looke to haue a number of vnwelcome Clients of their owne accusing thoughts and imaginations, that will betray them in the night to euery idle feare and illusion.

Therefore are the terrors of the night more than of the day, because the finnes of the night surmount the finnes of the day.

By night time came the Deluge ouer the face of the whole earth; by night time Iudas betrayed Chrift; Tarquin rauisht Lucretia.

When anie Poet would describe a horrible Tragicall accident; to adde the more probabilitie & credence vnto it, he dismally beginneth to tell, how it was darke night when it was done, and cheerfull daylight had quite abandoned the firmament.

Hence it is, that finne generally throughout the scripture is called the workes of darkenesse; for neuer is the diuell so busie as then, and then he thinkes he may aswel vndiscovered / walke abroad, as homicides and outlawes.

Had we no more Religion than we might deriue from heathen fables; me thinkes those dolefull Querrifters of the night, the Scritch-owle,
the Nightingale, and croking Frogs, might over-awe vs from anie inolent transgression at that time. The first for her lauifh blabbing of forbidden secrets, being for euer ordayned to be a blabbe of ill newes and misfortune, stil is crying out in our eares, that we are mortall, and must die: the second puts vs in minde of the end and punishment of lust & rauiement; and the third and laft, that we are but flyme & mud, such as those watrie creatures are bred of: and therefore why should we delight to adde more to our flyme & corruption, by extraordinarie surfets and drunkennes.

But these are nothing neither in comparison: for hee whom in the day heauen cannot exhale, the night wil neuer helpe: she onely pleading for her old grandmother hell, as well as the day for heauen.

Thus I shut vp my Treatife, abruptly, that hee who in the daye doth not good woorkes inough to answere the objiections of the night, will hardly aunswere at the daye of iudgement.

FINIS.

END OF VOL. III.